

PRECEPT SEVEN

PRECEPT SEVEN
FOR THE POWERS
OF HEAVEN
SHALL BE SHAKEN

DAVID JENKINS

For the Powers of Heaven Shall Be Shaken

Copyright © 2026 by David Jenkins. All rights reserved.

No part of this book may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording, or by any information storage and retrieval system without express written permission from the author, except in the case of brief quotations embodied in critical reviews and certain other noncommercial uses permitted by copyright law.

Printed in the United States of America.

ISBN XXX-X-XXXXXX-XXX-X (Paperback)

ISBN XXX-X-XXXXXX-XXX-X (Hardback)

ISBN XXX-X-XXXXXX-XXX-X (Digital)

02.06.26

Introduction

The Engrafted Word

We will be showing how to hear the engrafted word that is spread throughout the King James Version of the Bible.

By Wisdom, The World Knew Not God

In this chapter we will be learning why our Father is using the foolishness of this world. And we will also be learning the disadvantages of being wise.

I Will Leave The Light On For You

We will be showing that this chapter is inspired by a sone, but at the same time, we will learn that our Father has always left the light on for any and all.

Being Born Again

In this chapter we will learn how I was born again. What it will take for some to be born again without being born again in the flesh.

Following Jesus

This is a chapter that we took out of the sixth book. It was called obeying Jesus in that book. But you will learn how people can and will follow me. And I will say it now, nobody will physically follow me. The only way anyone can follow me is by doing as I have.

Heaven Or Hell

In this chapter we will show you how to see the new heaven and the new earth. You will learn how to join me in the new heaven and new earth. And you too, will have all things made new for you.

The First Death

Finally, we will be learning what the first death is all about. It is not at all what the world believes. And we will be showing the world how to overcome this death.

Get Thee Behind Me Satan

We will be learning how anybody and everybody that is alive is doing better than they deserve.

Becoming The Victim

We will be showing how easy it is for a person to allow themselves to become the victim even though no one is a victim.

Exorcisms

This chapter will show how the so called exorcisms that people do, are actually away of the flesh trying to cast out the Father. We will also be revealing the Son of Perdition in this chapter.

The Woman That Has Had Five Husbands

This is a chapter that was taken out of the fifth book, At Midnight I Will Rise. We did this because it lead into the following chapter.

For The Powers Of Heaven Shall Be Shaken

This chapter shows that the scriptures are the heavens that will be shaken. We will be showing that a lot of the things said in the Old Testament and New Testament, will be coming in to play in this generation.

Reincarnation

This is a last-minute addition to this book. Just before sending the manuscript in, I felt the Father was telling me to add this chapter. We will be showing how the scriptures teach us that our souls have been here for a thousand generations.

Conclusion

Precept Seven

Here we go again. I realize that we had just published the sixth book, but the Father is telling me to write another. This will be a continuation of the previous books. I confess, I was making a video on my YouTube channel THEJENKS1000, when our Father taught me what this entire book is going to be about. This is also why our Father has had me republish each of the books, leaving all the original content and adding the precept page. Each book takes you in more depth of the scriptures. Each precept, giving you a deeper understanding of our Father. Who He is, What He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing.

I will admit here and now as to why I keep telling you all that I am not writing another book. I am in the flesh still and I have in my mind, that if I right another book, it is like I am agreeing to continue waiting. My journey with the Father started almost 13 years ago now. Since this all started, my life has completely changed. I gave up all the ways of the world, and of man, and have devoted everything to our Father since. I am ready to die and go home. But I realize that this is just me being impatient, not remembering that we are on a completely different time frame than our Father. As He had me show in the fourth book, our hours, days, weeks, months, and years are different than what theirs are. We are only made in their image. So, whatever happens in heaven is what we have in earth. Just as the prayer tells us. We will be talking about this later in this book.

I want to remind everyone of a couple of things right up front. We are going to show we are to worship God the Father in spirit and truth. And then we are going to listen to when are told that God is working a works that no man will believe.

But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23-24)

Behold ye among the heathen, and regard, and wonder marvelously: for I will work a work in your days which ye will not believe, though it be told you. (Habakuk 1:5)

Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you. (Acts 13:41)

This precept is going to be showing you all how the scriptures are actually the heavens. We started to show this in the last book, *Declaring the end from the beginning*. As to how when we listen to the scriptures, we are listening to things that being said in heaven. Then the more we listen or meditate on them, the more time we spend in heaven without leaving the earth. But this time we are going to be showing how the heavens, or the scriptures are starting to shake. Or better said, coming to fruition.

In the last book, we showed you all how I am now sitting on the right side of God the Father in the heavenly places with everything about me being blue and white. Just the same as you see when you look up at the sky or heavens. This is because I do nothing but meditate on the scriptures all day long, every day of the week.

Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, (Ephesians 1:20)

PRECEPT SEVEN

Yes, the baptism of the Holy Ghost talked about in the last four books, took place on March 8 of 2016. This is when our Father raised me from the dead. As shown in the fifth book, *At Midnight I will rise*, the world is walking dead. Even though your heart is pumping, your breathing oxygen, and are alive in the flesh, you are walking dead until you turn back to our heavenly Father that created the light on the first day of creation, for His perfect instructions.

This precept will confuse you if you have not read any of the previous precepts or books. This precept is a continuation of the previous books, but will throw you for a lute if you have not been reading the previous ones. This book will be the most offensive and provoking of them all. We are going to be diving in the scriptures so that you as the reader, can know that many things prophesied about in the Old and New Testaments, are coming to play as we live today. As shown in all of the books we have written, the King James Version of the Bible is one long letter from our Father on how we are to live our lives today, and not a book just about the past.

As we go through this book, I ask that you keep this in mind. We are going to show you that it was our Father that actually wrote the King James Version of the Bible. We are going to be showing that when the men wrote the Bible, they did not write what they witnessed, but rather only wrote what the Father told to write through the Holy Ghost.

For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.
(Romans 15:4)

All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: (2 Timothy 3:16)

Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came

not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of
God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.
(2 Peter 1:20-21)

When we truly listen to these three sections of the Bible, we can know that the scriptures were all inspired by God and not man. We can know that the scriptures were given to us to search them out for doctrine, reproof, and correction. And most of all we can know that when the scriptures were written, they were not being written by the will of man. That means that the scriptures were not written because these men witnessed the events of the Bible, they were being told what to write by our Father through the Holy Ghost. And when our Father told them to write what they wrote, He made it sound as if it was past tense, but a lot of what they wrote, hadn't happened yet. And we will be the participants of a lot of things that are written, in our generation.

So, when we read or listen to the King James Version of the Bible, we are hearing words from God the Father Himself and not man. This also means that the entire Bible is one long letter from our Father, giving us instructions how to live our lives. In other words, the Bible is not past tense, it is present. This is when all will realize that I am here now and was never here before. This is when the world will truly understand what our Father meant He said, "declaring the end from the beginning", and from ancient times, making known the things that are not yet done, means.

For then must he often have suffered since the
foundation of the world: but now once in the end of
the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the
sacrifice of himself. (Hebrews 9:26)

I am here now to give the world an understanding of our Father, who He is, what He is doing and why He is doing what He is doing. Now I am going to point something out right out of the gate if you will. There will be type errors in this book. There will be sometimes

PRECEPT SEVEN

that there might be a few words put together out of order. This is an occurrence that has happened in all of the books the Father has had me write. Ever since we wrote the first book, when the publishers try to edit what I have written, they would always try to get me to change the context of what I am trying to teach. Because of this, I will not allow any publisher to edit any book that I publish. At no time do I try to portray an image other than of who I am. I am who I am just the way that I am. I will not put on a front for nobody. If you cannot get past this, then don't read this book. However, you need to be aware that you are only robbing yourself of the knowledge we share with the world. And you will not have anyone to blame but yourself when all this destruction begins. With that being said, let us dive into this book.

Introduction

I know we have already kind of had an introduction with the precept page, but I feel I need to talk a little more about what we are going to be learning in this book. I say like that because this deeper understanding of the scriptures that we are going to be talking about is a deeper understanding for myself also. I was making a YouTube video on my channel, THEJENKS1000 when the Father gave this understanding to me. Let us take a look at what the Father was showing me. We will only show these once for now because we will be talking about these a lot more later in this book.

For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: (Philippians 3:20)

And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of

the Gentiles be fulfilled. And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. (Luke 21:20-26)

I have been showing these verses in all of the books, but never connected them together as the Father showed me while I was making that video. He kept having me go from Philippians 3:20 to Luke 21:20-26. He kept having flip back in forth through these verses until it clicked. And because of that, I spent the next couple weeks relishing on this new depth of understanding. At the same time, gaining a deeper understanding. It is like the more I think about it, the more I understand it.

It kind of blows my mind, but yet, part of this has already happened. There is a chapter called The Woman That Has Had Five Husbands in the fifth book, At Midnight I will Rise. This woman is talked about in the fourth book of John. I met this woman and described this in detail in the fifth book, At midnight I Will Rise.

I am sure there will be things that I will be learning as I am writing this book. This has happened in previous books, and I have told you all when I need to rethink something, or I can relate to this. In the fourth book, in the chapter Building your house on the Rock, I stated that I think we are hearing the instructions as to how to make the human body. And because this is another new concept, I am sure there will be many times that I will be learning something for the first time.

At this time, I would like to just give you a quick heads up on some of the things you will be learning about in this book. You will be learning what the engrafted word is and how we can hear it. We will be showing how by being smart or well educated, makes it more difficult to know our Father. We will be going over being born again because nobody is entering into the kingdom of God unless they

have been born of the flesh, and born of the spirit. We will be talking about the dominion they have over us, just as we have dominion over the beast of the field and sea. This has a lot to do with our Father breathing life into you and all, so that we became a living soul. We will be discussing how many refuses to come to the light, even though this is the light that was on the first day of creation. We will be learning about the mansions in the heavens that we used to live in before we were cast here to earth or hell. We will also be talking about how the heaven are already starting to shake.

We will be covering all of this and so much more. I do truly hope that you have humbled yourself, willing to let down your guard, and open your mind for what you are about to learn. And sit back, embrace yourself with the knowledge of our Father for what is getting ready to come upon the earth. This is not going to be an easy ride for anyone.

I do want to inform you that there will be times during the writing of this book, that I will probably be jumping off of topic, or showing something that does not seem like it fits. This is just the way my mind works. I will write something referring to something that is shown in the scriptures, and when I am writing it, my mind will automatically go to somewhere else in the scriptures. I can literally take one verse and connect it to several other verses. And a lot of times, those verses that I connect to, won't be talking about the same topic at hand. So, if it seems that we are all the sudden changing topics, be patient for we will be getting back on target.

And I am sure there will be times in which I might even repeat myself a little. I do not take time off of work when I write these books. I usually work a full day and then work on the book for a while. Maybe a bit in the mornings after waking if I do not need to get rolling to make an on-time delivery. And because I am always meditating on the scriptures, I am concentrating on two or three chapters at a time. So, if there seems a time that we go over something twice in the same chapter, it is because I was working on something else and got sidetracked.

And because of how the Father had me show you all of how He has me bombard these books with King James verses, I will probably post

more the just the few verses that I am thinking about. If I am thinking of posting just a few verses from one chapter to get something across, there will be times that I will post the entire chapter. Depending on the length of the chapter. Or there will be times that I will only need to point out two or three verses from a chapter, but I will show a couple verses before, and a couple after the target verses.

And once again, I take no glory for being able to write this book. All the glory and honor goes to our Father for He is the true author of what we are getting ready to learn. I must say this, when I first started this book, I was not in the mood for it. Then after we got about a third of it written, things started happening that just totally blew my mind. Shortly after that I got to the point that I could not wait to get the truck stopped so that I could write.

This book will be a wild ride for you as you read through it. I only hope you all get as much enjoyment out of reading it as I did writing it.

The Engrafted Word

We are going to start with this chapter because this is something that we have talked about in many of the previous books, however we have never really explained what the engrafted word is. And how to hear it. This is something that I have been hearing since this all began back in 2011. When I first started looking into the rapture concept, I could clearly hear, see, and understand things that many could not. Including the pastor of the church the Father sent me to be baptized with water. This happened shortly after I was called to the Bible, and I could see and hear things and the pastor was teaching the complete opposite of what was clearly shown in the King James Version of the Bible. When I tried to bring this to his attention, he ignored it. Then when I started showing members of the congregation of what I could see and hear, the pastor asked me to be quiet or leave. I left. I have explained this in the second book, but that was actually the Father kicking me out of the man-made church. Unbeknownst to me, that was the Father kicking me out of the man-made church because I was going to be enrolling in His school in which has been bringing all of these books. I have been taught by our Father and no man has taught me anything about the scriptures. I realize that we are putting this chapter in the front of the book, however all of the books, are based off of being able to hear this engrafted word.

Let us now listen to where we can hear our Father tell us to hear this engrafted word.

Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. (James 1:21)

Now I want to look on e-sword, and online Bible concordance, so that we can hear and see what the biblical definition of engrafted means.

G1721 ἔμφυτος emphutos em'-foo-tos From
G1722 and a derivative of G5453; implanted
(figuratively): - engrafted.

As you can now see and hear, it is an implanted. This is where we must see or hear certain things that are said in the King James Version of the Bible. Then we need to be able to connect these implanted sections and connect it with other areas of the Bible. Remember that our Father has hid this from the wise and prudent. Even though everything we need to know is right in front of our eyes. This is why we are told blessed is the man that meditates on the scriptures.

Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of
the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor
sitteth in the seat of the scornful. (Psalm 90:1)

This is not meditating on what everyone is saying or doing that does not match up with what we are told in the King James Version of the Bible. This is meditating on the scriptures all of the time. Yes, this is what has happened to me from listening to the King James Version of the Bible so many times, it is all I think about. And because I enjoy listening and thinking of the scriptures, I tend to keep away from others. This is because most want to change the topic when I start talking about the scriptures. If you are not willing to talk about the scriptures and our perfect Father when your around me, we will not be talking much.

Now back on topic. Notice how this does say that you will be saved automatically if you hear this engrafted word? This is where we need to bring up when we are told that precept must be upon precept, line upon line, litter there and a little here.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: For with stammering lips and another tongue will he speak to this people. To whom he said, This is the rest wherewith ye may cause the weary to rest; and this is the refreshing: yet they would not hear. But the word of the Lord was unto them precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken. (Isaiah28:9-13)

Now we have showed this section before, well part of it anyway. I don't think we have showed all the way to where we can hear that precept upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little; that they might go, and fall backward, and be broken, and snared, and taken.

For some people, they will start to hear this engrafted word and will not like what they hear and start to do, so they will stay away from being able to hear this. I have told you all of this before, but I am going to give a quick rundown of it again. Back in 2016, when I was fasting at my brothers in South Dakota, he started to listen to the King James Version. Part of me thinks that he wanted something to happen to him as it was with me. By the time I had gotten to my brothers, I had already listened to the Bible at least four times. And things were changing with me and anybody and everybody that seen this, seen the knowledge I was and am obtaining was and is astonishing. Well, he didn't even make it through the fourth book when he and his wife when to the grocery store one day. When they got back, he yelled at me because he was looking at the ingredients in food to see if it had pork in it. I laughed because that is how powerful this is. He quit listening to the Bible because if he would have contineud to listen as

I do, he would have changed his entire life around. This engrafted word will turn your world upside down and then some. But it is for the better and not going to hurt you as long as you put your trust into our Father.

Listening to the King James Version of the Bible several times is the best way to hear the engrafted word, at least for me. But let us talk about a few other times we can connect this engrafted word. The example that I am going to use first is what our Father is telling me that needs to be brought up right away. This is something that I have not met or even heard of anyone that understands this concept, but yet, it is the most important topic that needs to be understood when hearing this engrafted word. This is certain things that are said in different areas of the Bible, but yet to make sense of anyone thing, you need to be able to connect them with the other areas. This is also something that I have been trying to explain in the last few books.

Many believe that Jesus was here a couple thousand years ago or so. If you believe this, you make our Father a liar, and we all should know that God cannot lie.

That by two immutable things, in which it was impossible for God to lie, we might have a strong consolation, who have fled for refuge to lay hold upon the hope set before us: (Hebrews6:18)

Now we need to put several areas together so that we can know that it is our Father that actually wrote the Bible, and He has been telling this along. First, let us listen to when we are told that all scripture was written for our learning.

For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope. (Romans 15:4)

PRECEPT SEVEN

All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: (2 Timothy 3:16)

Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2 Peter 1:20-21)

By listening to just these three sections of the Bible, we can know that the scriptures were written for our learning. We can also know that the scriptures were not written because these were events or things that were witnessed by the men that wrote the scriptures. These holy men spoke, or wrote what they were being told to write by our Father. And because our Father is all knowing, He made it sound as if it was past tense. To Him, it was, but for us, the things in which He had them write hadn't happened yet. That is what Isaiah 46:10 is saying.

Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure: (Isaiah 46:10)

And as we know the scriptures cannot be broken.

If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken; (John 10:35)

Now listen to when we are told that Jesus only appears once in the end of the world.

For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of

the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. (Hebrews 9:26)

I have been showing you all in the last few books, that we all are Jesus and that is how he suffers since the foundation of the world. We all make up the one Son of God. But then it tells us that he only appeared once in the end of the world and putting away sin by the sacrificing of himself. Well how can that be? How can the scriptures talk about all the things Jesus did if he wasn't here before? This is when we need to go back to the name of the last book we wrote.

Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure: (Isaiah 46:10)

Can you hear it? He is telling us that He is declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things are not yet done. This means that if we are not grasping what the very beginning is saying, we will never understand how and when the end will be. Don't get me wrong, no one knows the day or hour but, we can know the season in which the end will be upon us.

The Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and tempting desired him that he would shew them a sign from heaven. He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, It will be fair weather: for the sky is red. And in the morning, It will be foul weather to day: for the sky is red and lowering. O ye hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not discern the signs of the times? (Matthew 16:1-3)

Now the Bible scholars and theologians have figured out that there are 400 years between the Old and New Testaments. But God said from ancient times the things that are not yet done. The King

PRECEPT SEVEN

James Version of the Bible was published in 1611. I was called to the Bible in 2011, as shown in all of the books. That is 400 years exactly. So, from ancient times, He declared what would be happening when I got here. And yes, one of the next chapters, will be a repeat of a chapter from a previous book. It will be about the woman that has had five husbands talked about in John 4. This happened to with me and this woman, Just as He said it would.

Now I feel the Father is telling me that I need to show a few more spots that are connected that also are telling us that I was never here before. The first area we need to look at is when we are told that Jesus is in the image of the invisible God.

For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; Strengthened with all might, according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longsuffering with joyfulness; Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: (Colossians 1:9-15)

As you can see and hear, Jesus is in the image of the invisible God. But there is something else that we need to be paying attention to, did you hear how we have been translated into the kingdom of his dear Son?

And when he was demanded of the Pharisees, when the kingdom of God should come, he answered them and said, The kingdom of God cometh not with observation: Neither shall they say, Lo here! or, lo there! for, behold, the kingdom of God is within you. And he said unto the disciples, The days will come, when ye shall desire to see one of the days of the Son of man, and ye shall not see it. (Luke 17:20-22)

Now let us listen to how God said that He would make me into the firstborn.

I have found David my servant; with my holy oil have I anointed him: With whom my hand shall be established: mine arm also shall strengthen him. The enemy shall not exact upon him; nor the son of wickedness afflict him. And I will beat down his foes before his face, and plague them that hate him. But my faithfulness and my mercy shall be with him: and in my name shall his horn be exalted. I will set his hand also in the sea, and his right hand in the rivers. He shall cry unto me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation. Also I will make him my firstborn, higher than the kings of the earth. (Psalm 89:20-27)

There it is, He is making me into the firstborn. Just like nothing happens instantaneously, it takes time. And that is why He had me name my new website, davidofpsalm89.com. Because I am that particular David, the servant that He found. Which I find a little awkward to think that He found me because He knew what I was going to be doing when He had the holy men write what they wrote before the King James Version of the Bible was written. As explained in the last book, He is the One that caused me to stay away from the Bible until I was forty-one years old. This is how I knew no sin.

Anyhow, I just felt like the Father was telling me to put this here, so I did.

Now with me just showing you all this, it would be extremely hard for you to understand how this works. So, we are going to looking at several different areas of the Bible that we need to connect, even though they are spread out throughout the entire Bible. The first thing we need to be looking at is how the virgin will conceive a child.

Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign;
Behold, a virgin shall conceive, and bear a son, and
shall call his name Immanuel. (Isaiah 7:14)

Behold, a virgin shall be with child, and shall
bring forth a son, and they shall call his name
Emmanuel, which being interpreted is, God with us.
(Matthew 1:23)

As you can see and hear, God said He shall give us a sign and that sign will be a virgin that conceive, and bear a son. And shall call his name Immanuel. Notice how this Immanuel is spelled with an I, and not an E. But when we take a glance at E-sword, an online Bible concordance, we can see that they mean the same, God with us.

H6005 'immânû'êl im-maw-noo-ale' From H5973
and H410 with suffix pronoun inserted; with us (is)
God; Immanuel, a name of Isaiah's son: - Immanuel.

Now I want to show the Greek definition of Emmanuel as shown in Matthew.

G1694 Ἐμμανουήλ Emmanouēl em-man-oo-ale' Of
Hebrew origin [H6005]; God with us; Emmanuel, a
name of Christ: - Emmanuel.

You can now see and hear that they both mean God with us. But how can that mean God with us, if God is only creating one child? Please bear with me for a minute. One child that comes from this virgin would only be in one small area of the world, but we are told that God created all of us, that is why we are told not to call any man on earth our Father for we all have one Father and He is in heaven.

And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. (Matthew 23:9)

Notice how the father upon the earth is not capitalized, but our Father which is in heaven is? Now we need to be looking at another verse that I started explaining in the second book. And this does take us to the basic understanding of this verse that I understood until I was writing the sixth book, *Declaring the end from the beginning*. Then as you will learn later in this book, our Father gave me a much deeper understanding of this verse. But for now, let us listen to it.

For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: (Philippians 3:20)

Going back to my first understanding of this verse, we are hearing conversations being held in heaven. It is like we are eavesdropping on what they are saying from above. This is what our Father was telling those above that have dominion over our bodies. We will be talking about this dominion later in the book also.

And it yieldeth much increase unto the kings whom thou hast set over us because of our sins: also they have dominion over our bodies, and over our cattle, at their pleasure, and we are in great distress. (Nehemiah 9:37)

I am not going to go into showing how they have dominion over our bodies, other than what we just read and heard. I have talked

PRECEPT SEVEN

about this a lot in previous books, and I am trying to stay at least close to topic. But these are the kings and so forth that our Father was talking to. These kings and such have dominion over our bodies just as we have dominion over the beast of the field. This is explained in the fourth book, Jesus is here, in detail and again, we will be talking about it later. So, now we need to look and listen to who this virgin is.

And the woman was arrayed in purple and scarlet colour, and decked with gold and precious stones and pearls, having a golden cup in her hand full of abominations and filthiness of her fornication: And upon her forehead was a name written, Mystery, Babylon The Great, The Mother Of Harlots And Abominations Of The Earth. (Revelation 17:4-5)

This is our Father's spiritual wife. This is where it is very important that you have at least read the last book. The books before the sixth, lead up to this but the sixth really started to show this. This is our Mother; this is the virgin Mary right here. We all are partakers of her just as a child takes part of his or her mom. They follow her guidance and instructions. We all were cast here from the heavens by our Father because we all thought that we could obtain our Father's perfection by doing things differently than our Father's ways or instructions to perfection. Yes, we are the third of the starts that the tail of the beast or dragon that Satan brought with him to earth or hell. That is what makes man the beast as covered in the last book, and will be covered later in this one.

This is when we need to listen to Jesus tell us that he is the life.

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.
(John 14:6)

Now we need to listen to when our Father breathed life into man so that man became a living soul.

And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (Genesis 2:7)

This is our Father putting a piece of Himself into each person on the planet, even in the very beginning of the scriptures. This is how the word became flesh as shown in the last book, Declaring the end from the beginning. This is the light that our Father created on the very first day of creation. Even though He did not create the sun, moon, and stars until the fourth day of creation. This is the only way that we can understand how Jesus must often suffer since the foundation of the world, as we just heard a bit ago in Hebrews nine.. Because Jesus is everybody that has ever been on the planet, on the planet, and will be on the planet. That is what makes everyone part of the One Son of God. There was no sex involved when our Mother conceived this child.

This is why this child is called many names as we are told in Isaiah.

For unto us a child is born, unto us a son is given:
and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and
his name shall be called Wonderful, Counsellor, The
mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of
Peace. (Isaiah 9:6)

This does not make Jesus, God the Father but rather we are being told that this is what people will call him.. Quick example of this, if someone calls you something other than your name, does that automatically legally change your name to whatever you were called? No, it does not. This is what the Father is saying people would call the Son of God. Notice how the government shall be upon his shoulder? That is the government of the whole world. When one does a quick Google search, you will find out that there are approximately 200 independent governments in the world. But yet we are told the government shall be on his shoulders. That is because everyone is part of the One Son of God. The Government is on all of our shoulders, one way or another.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Now we need to listen to Hebrews nine again.

For then must he often have suffered since the foundation of the world: but now once in the end of the world hath he appeared to put away sin by the sacrifice of himself. (Hebrews 9:26)

We just went over how Jesus must suffer since the foundation of the world, but how can he appear once in the end of the world if he was here before now? If he was here in the past, this world would not be here anymore. As we learned just a bit ago, the holy men did not write the scriptures by their own will, they spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. They were being told what to write by our Father. Remember whatever was written afore time, was written for our learning. Now let us listen to when our Father tells us when He will send His son made of a woman.

But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. (Galatians 4:3-5)

Now realizing that the scriptures were written for our learning, and hearing that when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son. We need to listen to when we are told that not one jot, nor tittle in no wise will pass until all be fulfilled.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. (Matthew 5:17-18)

Now that we are realizing that Jesus was not here in the past. And beings how we just went over how Jesus is the piece of God the Father Himself, inside each person, making everybody part of the One Son of God. We need to be listening to when Jesus was born.

Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him. When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born. And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet, And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel. Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also. When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense and myrrh. (Matthew 2:1-11)

PRECEPT SEVEN

First thing we need to be paying attention to is how we hear them talking about the kings in the beginning of the chapter. Remember how we heard how the kings have dominion over our bodies? Remember how we are hearing conversations that are being held in heaven and not on the earth? Now let us think about this star that is in the east. When we look up into the clear sky at night, we can see other planets. They look to be just like the other stars. If a person does not have any knowledge of how the planets reflect the light from the sun at night, they would never be able to tell the difference.

Now we need to go to the book of Revelation and listen to when we can hear about this war in heaven. No, we are not getting off the topic of Jesus's birth but rather showing where the scriptures show how we were cast to earth along with Satan.

And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the

great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent. And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. (Revelation 12:1-17)

This is our mother that brought forth a man child that was to rule all nations. This is the process of our Father breathing life into all mankind so that mankind became a living soul. Obviously, this is me paraphrasing because we already went over this. Now this war

PRECEPT SEVEN

took place in heaven before our Father created the earth for His Son. Which is all of us, starting with Adam and Eve. That is how this man child rules all nations. We all now that Mary was a virgin, right? Let us listen to when we can hear when the Virgin fell.

To a virgin espoused to a man whose name was Joseph, of the house of David; and the virgin's name was Mary. (Luke 1:27)

Hear ye this word which I take up against you, even a lamentation, O house of Israel. The virgin of Israel is fallen; she shall no more rise: she is forsaken upon her land; there is none to raise her up. For thus saith the Lord God; The city that went out by a thousand shall leave an hundred, and that which went forth by an hundred shall leave ten, to the house of Israel. For thus saith the Lord unto the house of Israel, Seek ye me, and ye shall live: But seek not Bethel, nor enter into Gilgal, and pass not to Beersheba: for Gilgal shall surely go into captivity, and Bethel shall come to nought. Seek the Lord, and ye shall live; lest he break out like fire in the house of Joseph, and devour it, and there be none to quench it in Bethel. Ye who turn judgment to wormwood, and leave off righteousness in the earth,(Amos 5:1-7)

Then without the Father confirming this, I believe this flood that was cast out of the dragon's mouth was the flood of Noah's days. There is no power, but the power of God the Father and He is in charge of everything. Including Satan or the dragon.

This is when we need to listen to when we are told that our Father is the one that creates evil, not Satan or the Devil. And there is no power but the power of God.

I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: I the Lord do all these things. (Isaiah 45:7)

Shall a trumpet be blown in the city, and the people not be afraid? shall there be evil in a city, and the Lord hath not done it? (Amos 3:6)

If that nation, against whom I have pronounced, turn from their evil, I will repent of the evil that I thought to do unto them. (Jeremiah 18:8)

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers. For there is no power but of God: the powers that be are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they that resist shall receive to themselves damnation. (Romans 13:1-2)

Now let us talk about this star in the east. Let us just use a quick example and think of you going outside in the dark, on a clear night. Look to the east and find a particular star. Start driving or walking toward this star. When do you think you will get there. This experiment will work no matter where you are in the world today. Your not going to get there. But those above us can and do. As shown in the fourth book, Jesus is here, they have countries, nations, and directions above us. That is what being made in their image and likeness is all about.

After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine

PRECEPT SEVEN

is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever.
Amen. (Matthew 6:9-13)

If they have in in heaven, or if it is happening in heaven, it will be done the same here in the earth. That is what being made in their image, in their likeness, is all about.

Now let us think about the gifts that were given when this child was born. Gold is listed first, when one thinks of Gold, we tend to think of money. Money is a tool that we need to survive with. So, from above, all of us as one, were given the money to survive with. We will not be talking about the other effects of the outcome of having money can and will do here. We are only showing that the gold referred to here is representing money. If one was to give actual gold to an infant child, this child has no need and, or could not use it for anything other than maybe something to teeth on. The gold in very light weights would only go in the infants mouth. So, now let us look as to what frankincense is. To do this we need to look on E-sword, an online Bible concordance.

G3030 λίβανος libanos lib'-an-os Of foreign origin [H3828]; the incense tree, that is, (by implication) incense itself: - frankincense.

Now this show frankincense as being something of a tree or something. So, I want to show three different Bible verses that show how this word in used in the scriptures so that we can understand what this frankincense is.

And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men. Then shall the man bring his wife unto the priest, and he shall bring her offering for her, the tenth part of an ephah of barley meal; he shall pour no oil upon it, nor put frankincense

thereon; for it is an offering of jealousy, an offering of memorial, bringing iniquity to remembrance. (Numbers 5:15)

Then I commanded, and they cleansed the chambers: and thither brought I again the vessels of the house of God, with the meat offering and the frankincense. (Nehemiah 13:9)

And cinnamon, and odours, and ointments, and frankincense, and wine, and oil, and fine flour, and wheat, and beasts, and sheep, and horses, and chariots, and slaves, and souls of men. (Revelation 18:13)

Just to listen to this in the simplest form, we can hear that this is something that is used for preparing food for sacrifices. So, what is an infant child going to do with something like this.

Now let us look on E-sword to see and hear what the meaning of myrrh is.

G4666 *σμύρνα* *smurna* *smoor'-nah* Apparently strengthened for G3464; myrrh: - myrrh.

Beings how this gives us the reference of being strengthened for G3464, we need to look into what G3464 is.

G3464 *μύρον* *muron* *moo'-ron* Probably of foreign origin (compare [H4753] and G4666); "myrrh", that is, (by implication) perfumed oil: - ointment.

As you can see and hear now, this is something to do with perfumed oil. The first thing that comes to my mind is the different scents of soaps and such to clean ourselves with.. So, what would an infant child do with this other than try to put it in his mouth?

The reason we just went over the birth of Christ is we needed to explain how these gifts were given to mankind and not just one tiny

little infant when this infant was born, These were given to mankind so that mankind would be able to cope with life here in hell or on earth.

This also leads us into another way of hearing the engrafted word. You might think that this is a very weird way of hearing this, and it kind of is. But at the same time, it is very important and is one of the first ways that I heard, or didn't hear the engrafted word. We need to pay attention to what is not being said. And I am going to use christmas first because it is just a week or so before this date and yes, I am like almost pulling the hair out of my head, and I get this way every year. As you can see and hear, I won't even capitalize it. Nowhere in the King James Version of the Bible are we told to celebrate man-made holidays, including christmas. In fact, the scriptures talk against this day. First, let us listen to when we are told not to be as the heathen.

Hear ye the word which the Lord speaketh unto you, O house of Israel: Thus saith the Lord, Learn not the way of the heathen, and be not dismayed at the signs of heaven; for the heathen are dismayed at them. For the customs of the people are vain: for one cutteth a tree out of the forest, the work of the hands of the workman, with the axe. They deck it with silver and with gold; they fasten it with nails and with hammers, that it move not. They are upright as the palm tree, but speak not: they must needs be borne, because they cannot go. Be not afraid of them; for they cannot do evil, neither also is it in them to do good. (Jeremiah 10:1-5)

When one reads this or better yet, listens to this, one can know that this talking about the heathen that fasten a christmas tree to the wall and decorate it with gold and silver. Yes, many will try to say this is a custom of the pagans but yet, the King James Version of the Bible does not talk about pagans. So, this is a way for people to try to justify celebrating this day. Saying this was talking about the people

of the past. It is time to wake up and rise from the dead and realize that the entire Bible was written for our learning. It is not a book of past events, however our magnificent Father told to holy men to write certain things in a way that make it sound as if it happened in the past but rather, a lot of the entire Bible will be happening in our lifetimes. And yes, I know many are thinking that they have been saying this for thousands of years. To that, they have, but never before in history has anyone been able to give the world an understanding of our Father as I do.

I know we talked about this in the last book, but this is something that we are going to talk about it a bit here and it will be covered in more detail in a later chapter. Let us listen to the two times in the book of Revelation of when we can hear that it is works of those that celebrate christmas is hated. But to do this, we will need to do a little research.

But this thou hast, that thou hatest the deeds of the Nicolaitanes, which I also hate. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the paradise of God. (Revelation 2:6-7)

So hast thou also them that hold the doctrine of the Nicolaitanes, which thing I hate. Repent; or else I will come unto thee quickly, and will fight against them with the sword of my mouth. He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it. (Revelation 2:15-17)

Now we just listened to two different times that we can hear how our Father told the holy men that wrote the scriptures, that He hates

PRECEPT SEVEN

the works of the Nicolaitanes. So, we need to look on E-sword, and online Bible concordance, so that we can what these Nicolaitanes is.

G3531 Νικολαίτης Nikolaitēs nik-ol-ah-ee'-taceFrom G3532; a Nicolaite, that is, adherent of Nicolaus: - Nicolaitane.

G3532 Νικόλαος Nikolaosnik-ol'-ah-osFrom G3534 and G2004; victorious over the people; Nicolaus, a heretic: - Nicolaus.

Now as you can see and hear, we could chase this down forever, so I am only showing where it shows that it comes from G3532. Either way, you can hear that this is adherent to Nicolaus. Who is this fictional character that everybody lies to their children about? St. Nicolaus, or Santa Clause. Parents teach their children about this fictional character from the time they are born. But yet. They get mad when their children lie to them when they do something that they should not have done. Think about who taught them to lie that is who the parents should be mad at, not the children for doing what they have been taught.

Then we need to listen to how our Father hates us receiving gifts.

And thou shalt take no gift: for the gift blindeth the wise, and perverteth the words of the righteous. (Exodus 23:8)

Thou shalt not wrest judgment; thou shalt not respect persons, neither take a gift: for a gift doth blind the eyes of the wise, and pervert the words of the righteous. (Deuteronomy 16:19)

He that is greedy of gain troubleth his own house; but he that hateth gifts shall live. (Proverbs 15:27)

Wherefore now let the fear of the Lord be upon you; take heed and do it: for there is no iniquity with the Lord our God, nor respect of persons, nor taking of gifts. (2 Chronicles 19:7)

Just by connecting engrafted word that is spread throughout the entire Bible, one can know without a doubt, birthdays and christmas is not something that anybody should be celebrating if we do not want to be counted as a heathen. But then remember, our perfect Father in which has told us to hearken to His voice, many times and then some, never told us to celebrate these days, so don't. Just trust Him, if He thought you needed to celebrate these days, He would have told you to.

Now I am going to share something that just recently happened. You will be reading later about how I have spent the last year or so hardly listening to the Bible as I used to. I probably listened to it something like five times or so, and for me, that is like not listening to it at all. Anyway, as I was recently listening to the Bible, and when I got to the new testament, I had another vision as I was driving. And as the Father is explaining it to me, we are going to do a little experiment of this engrafted word. Let me show you what I was listening too.

Now when Jesus was born in Bethlehem of Judaea in the days of Herod the king, behold, there came wise men from the east to Jerusalem, Saying, Where is he that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him. When Herod the king had heard these things, he was troubled, and all Jerusalem with him. And when he had gathered all the chief priests and scribes of the people together, he demanded of them where Christ should be born. And they said unto him, In Bethlehem of Judaea: for thus it is written by the prophet, And thou Bethlehem, in the land of Juda, art not the least among the princes of Juda: for out of

thee shall come a Governor, that shall rule my people Israel. Then Herod, when he had privily called the wise men, enquired of them diligently what time the star appeared. And he sent them to Bethlehem, and said, Go and search diligently for the young child; and when ye have found him, bring me word again, that I may come and worship him also. When they had heard the king, they departed; and, lo, the star, which they saw in the east, went before them, till it came and stood over where the young child was. When they saw the star, they rejoiced with exceeding great joy. And when they were come into the house, they saw the young child with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him: and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts; gold, and frankincense and myrrh. And being warned of God in a dream that they should not return to Herod, they departed into their own country another way. And when they were departed, behold, the angel of the Lord appeareth to Joseph in a dream, saying, Arise, and take the young child and his mother, and flee into Egypt, and be thou there until I bring thee word: for Herod will seek the young child to destroy him. When he arose, he took the young child and his mother by night, and departed into Egypt: And was there until the death of Herod: that it might be fulfilled which was spoken of the Lord by the prophet, saying, Out of Egypt have I called my son. Then Herod, when he saw that he was mocked of the wise men, was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two years old and under, according to the time which he had diligently inquired of the wise men. Then was fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremiah the prophet, saying,

In Rama was there a voice heard, lamentation, and weeping, and great mourning, Rachel weeping for her children, and would not be comforted, because they are not. (Matthew 2:1-18)

As I was driving, I was listening to this. Then as I am listening to this, I had a vision of another area of the Bible. It was not a vision that blocked my view as I was driving. When things like this happen, it is like it does not take my mind of the road, but at the same time, I see this in my mind. And what I saw is this.

And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast out into the earth, and his angels were

PRECEPT SEVEN

cast out with him. And I heard a loud voice saying in heaven, Now is come salvation, and strength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Christ: for the accuser of our brethren is cast down, which accused them before our God day and night. And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their testimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death. Therefore rejoice, ye heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabitants of the earth and of the sea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, because he knoweth that he hath but a short time. And when the dragon saw that he was cast unto the earth, he persecuted the woman which brought forth the man child. And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that she might fly into the wilderness, into her place, where she is nourished for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the serpent. And the serpent cast out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cause her to be carried away of the flood. And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and swallowed up the flood which the dragon cast out of his mouth. And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her seed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the testimony of Jesus Christ. (Revelation 12:1-17)

It helps with how I have this abundant knowledge of our Father and the Bible. It is part of the quickening that I have been going through. But when I was listening to that in Matthew, I was seeing this woman fleeing after she delivered the child of God. This took place somewhere in heaven and not on earth, as shown in previous books. That is why we hear woe to the inhabitants of earth. Then this

woman was given two wings to fly to a place where she is nourished for a time, times, and a half time.

Now try to think about what you read in Matthew when the mother of the child departed out of the country another way. Then try to think about how we have shown in previous books, that this world is covered with a spiritual flood. This flood's name is Egypt and is described in detail in the fourth book, Jesus is here, and will be talked about later in this one.

Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof. (Jeremiah 46:8)

Just incase your not seeing it, or understanding it, all this talking in Mattew two, is what happened in Revelation 12. But when our Father told the holy men to write what they wrote, He had put this so that we could only see, hear, and understand through a spiritual perspective.

Now we are going to talk about another way that we can hear this engrafted word. We already touched on this just a bit ago. We told you to notice how the father of physical realm of the earth was not capitalized, but the Father in heaven is. This happens a lot in the scriptures. The first thing we need to be showing, is something that was brought up in the first book we wrote, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening. Let us listen to when God the Father told Moses that say that I AM sent you.

And Moses said unto God, Behold, when I come unto the children of Israel, and shall say unto them, The God of your fathers hath sent me unto you; and they shall say to me, What is his name? what shall I say unto them? And God said unto Moses, I Am That I Am: and he said, Thus shalt thou say unto

the children of Israel, I Am hath sent me unto you.
(Exodus 3:13-14)

I truly hope this is not the first book of all of them that you are reading. The chapter that this was focused on in the first book, is Who Is Jesus? I know that there are many that think Jesus is or was God the Father. Throughout all of these books, we have proven without a doubt that Jesus is not God the Father. He is the Son of God in which is everybody on this planet as One. But we are not going to focus on that because as the saying goes, we have beat that that old dog down with a bat.

With that being said, let us listen to when Jesus states that before Abraham, I am.

Yet ye have not known him; but I know him: and if I should say, I know him not, I shall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his saying. Your father Abraham rejoiced to see my day: and he saw it, and was glad. Then said the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and hast thou seen Abraham? Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Before Abraham was, I am. (John 8:55-58)

As you can see and hear, when Jesus states that before Abraham was, I am, the I am, is in lower case letters. But when we heard God tell Moses to say that I AM sent you, it is all caps. Now that we are realizing the scriptures were written not by the will of man, but holy men were being told what to write by our Father through the Holy Ghost, we should be knowing that our Father is telling us right here that Jesus is not God.

Now let us talk about how Abraham saw my day and rejoiced. Remember how we have been showing you all that we are reigning with Christ now? That is how everybody is part of the One Son of God. Christ is in all, and is all.

Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumcision nor uncircumcision, Barbarian, Scythian, bond nor free: but Christ is all, and in all. (Colossians 3:11)

This is what Abraham saw. He seen that we are reigning with Christ now and that is why he was glad. He saw that we are living the seventh day now. And we all should be knowing that our Father is not sharing His glory with any other, not even His Son. After all, God the Father is the creator of His Son. His Son did not create Him.

Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; (Exodus 20:4-5)

I am the Lord: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

For mine own sake, even for mine own sake, will I do it: for how should my name be polluted? and I will not give my glory unto another. (Isaiah 48:11)

Now I just want to talk about something here for a minute. This goes along with how many give all the glory to Jesus and continue to think of him as the father. Can you hear what is being said in the second commandment? Now think of all the physical crosses that are made with hands, now think of all the pictures and statues of Jesus, or what people think he looked like, even though we know that I was never here before. Are these all not graven images of something in the heavens, or earth?

PRECEPT SEVEN

A little side note here. I just cannot go on without saying this. For anyone that is giving all the glory to Jesus and not our Father, I want to remind you that God is a jealous God.

For thou shalt worship no other god: for the Lord,
whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God: (Exodus 34:14)

And if you do not think this is that big of a deal, let me ask you if you have ever been around anyone with a jealousy issue? And that jealousy issue is only man sized. Let us listen to what can and will happen to those that choose to give the glory to anyone but God.

Now about that time Herod the king stretched forth his hands to vex certain of the church. And he killed James the brother of John with the sword. And because he saw it pleased the Jews, he proceeded further to take Peter also. (Then were the days of unleavened bread.) And when he had apprehended him, he put him in prison, and delivered him to four quaternions of soldiers to keep him; intending after Easter to bring him forth to the people. Peter therefore was kept in prison: but prayer was made without ceasing of the church unto God for him. And when Herod would have brought him forth, the same night Peter was sleeping between two soldiers, bound with two chains: and the keepers before the door kept the prison. And, behold, the angel of the Lord came upon him, and a light shined in the prison: and he smote Peter on the side, and raised him up, saying, Arise up quickly. And his chains fell off from his hands. And the angel said unto him, Gird thyself, and bind on thy sandals. And so he did. And he saith unto him, Cast thy garment about thee, and follow me. And he went out, and followed him; and wist not that it was true which was done by the angel; but

thought he saw a vision. When they were past the first and the second ward, they came unto the iron gate that leadeth unto the city; which opened to them of his own accord: and they went out, and passed on through one street; and forthwith the angel departed from him. And when Peter was come to himself, he said, Now I know of a surety, that the Lord hath sent his angel, and hath delivered me out of the hand of Herod, and from all the expectation of the people of the Jews. And when he had considered the thing, he came to the house of Mary the mother of John, whose surname was Mark; where many were gathered together praying. And as Peter knocked at the door of the gate, a damsel came to hearken, named Rhoda. And when she knew Peter's voice, she opened not the gate for gladness, but ran in, and told how Peter stood before the gate. And they said unto her, Thou art mad. But she constantly affirmed that it was even so. Then said they, It is his angel. But Peter continued knocking: and when they had opened the door, and saw him, they were astonished. But he, beckoning unto them with the hand to hold their peace, declared unto them how the Lord had brought him out of the prison. And he said, Go shew these things unto James, and to the brethren. And he departed, and went into another place. Now as soon as it was day, there was no small stir among the soldiers, what was become of Peter. And when Herod had sought for him, and found him not, he examined the keepers, and commanded that they should be put to death. And he went down from Judaea to Caesarea, and there abode. And Herod was highly displeased with them of Tyre and Sidon: but they came with one accord to him, and, having made Blastus the king's chamberlain their friend, desired peace; because their country was

nourished by the king's country. And upon a set day Herod, arrayed in royal apparel, sat upon his throne, and made an oration unto them. And the people gave a shout, saying, It is the voice of a Asgod, and not of a man. And immediately the angel of the Lord smote him, because he gave not God the glory: and he was eaten of worms, and gave up the ghost. (Acts 12:1-23)

Harold was stricken down by the angel of the Lord because He did not give glory to God the Father. Do you really think God will show leniency on those that give all the glory to Jesus and not Him? And I truly believe that this next chapter of Romans that I am going to post, has a lot to do with all those that take God's name in vein, and give all the glory to another.

Paul, a servant of Jesus Christ, called to be an apostle, separated unto the gospel of God, (Which he had promised afore by his prophets in the holy scriptures,) Concerning his Son Jesus Christ our Lord, which was made of the seed of David according to the flesh; And declared to be the Son of God with power, according to the spirit of holiness, by the resurrection from the dead: By whom we have received grace and apostleship, for obedience to the faith among all nations, for his name: Among whom are ye also the called of Jesus Christ: To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called to be saints: Grace to you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ. First, I thank my God through Jesus Christ for you all, that your faith is spoken of throughout the whole world. For God is my witness, whom I serve with my spirit in the gospel of his Son, that without ceasing I make mention of you always in my prayers; Making request, if by any means now at length I might have a prosperous journey by the will of God to come unto

you. For I long to see you, that I may impart unto you some spiritual gift, to the end ye may be established; That is, that I may be comforted together with you by the mutual faith both of you and me. Now I would not have you ignorant, brethren, that oftentimes I purposed to come unto you, (but was let hitherto,) that I might have some fruit among you also, even as among other Gentiles. I am debtor both to the Greeks, and to the Barbarians; both to the wise, and to the unwise. So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach the gospel to you that are at Rome also. For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek. For therein is the righteousness of God revealed from faith to faith: as it is written, The just shall live by faith. For the wrath of God is revealed from heaven against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men, who hold the truth in unrighteousness; Because that which may be known of God is manifest in them; for God hath shewed it unto them. For the invisible things of him from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood by the things that are made, even his eternal power and Godhead; so that they are without excuse: Because that, when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened. Professing themselves to be wise, they became fools, And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served

PRECEPT SEVEN

the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen. For this cause God gave them up unto vile affections: for even their women did change the natural use into that which is against nature: And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman, burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly, and receiving in themselves that recompence of their error which was meet. And even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind, to do those things which are not convenient; Being filled with all unrighteousness, fornication, wickedness, covetousness, maliciousness; full of envy, murder, debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers, Backbiters, haters of God, spiteful, proud, boasters, inventors of evil things, disobedient to parents, Without understanding, covenantbreakers, without natural affection, implacable, unmerciful: Who knowing the judgment of God, that they which commit such things are worthy of death, not only do the same, but have pleasure in them that do them. (Romans 1:1-32)

I believe because it is our Father that creates each one of us, we all know Him when we are born in the flesh. Then as we grow, we get adapted to the ways of this world. Then we make God into all kinds of things other than our loving Father. Man has taken God and made the image of Him as some mean, cruel, and horrible god. Talk to anyone and just let them tell you about the god of the Old Testament and you will know exactly what I am talking about.

Then because people did not devote enough time to get to know our Father by just listening to Him and Him only, they created this Jesus that supposedly died for our sins a couple thousand years ago. And because this imaginary man did this, people didn't need the

God of the Old Testament. They make the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man.

These are the same people that say that the resurrection is past already. If you think I was here in the past and physically died for the worlds sins, you are saying the resurrection is past already.

Who concerning the truth have erred, saying that the resurrection is past already; and overthrow the faith of some. (2 Timothy 2:18)

When I think back to when this all started, I think getting this concept out of my mind was not the hardest to learn, but close to it. That was and is the hype that goes throughout the world. Many believe that I was here in the past because that is what they have been told. I can easily see how that would overthrow the faith of some. It kind of would make some people have a false hope. Because they believe in this false narrative, they hope for something that isn't going to happen. Because they take the name of God in vein. They think that the Old Testament is not for us. They think that the God of the Old Testament is useless, or full of emptiness. Or they think that He is destructive. Let us look at the third commandment. Then we will show the meaning of vein using E-sword, an online Bible Concordance.

Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord thy God in vain; for the Lord will not hold him guiltless that taketh his name in vain. (Exodus 20:7)

H17723 shâv'shav shawv, shav From the same as H7722 in the sense of desolating; evil (as destructive), literally (ruin) or morally (especially guile); figuratively idolatry (as false, subjectively), uselessness (as deceptive, objectively; also adverbially in vain): - false (-ly), lie, lying, vain, vanity.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Because of what people think about our Father, let me ask how many think that He has at least one of these characteristics listed? But yet it is Him that has allowed any and all to be here now reading this book.

Now let us talk about the physical crosses that are graven images, and the spiritual crosses within each person on the planet that is not made with hands. First, we need to realize that God dwells in temples not made with hands.

Howbeit the most High dwelleth not in temples made with hands; as saith the prophet, Heaven is my throne, and earth is my footstool: what house will ye build me? saith the Lord: or what is the place of my rest? (Acts 7:48-49)

The human body is not made with hands, that is why we are told that we are the temple of God.

Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and that the Spirit of God dwelleth in you? If any man defile the temple of God, him shall God destroy; for the temple of God is holy, which temple ye are. (1 Corinthians 3:16-17)

As explained in previous books, we all carry our own cross that is not made with hands. And we carry this cross to our own crucifixion every day. Somebody is always thinking and or treating you badly for just being who you are.

Remember how a day is a thousand years, and a thousand years is a day?

But, beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with the Lord as a thousand years, and a thousand years as one day. (2 Peter 3:8)

Now we all know that God rested on the seventh day, right? Let us listen to the first six days of creation.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. And God said, Let there be a firmament in the midst of the waters, and let it divide the waters from the waters. And God made the firmament, and divided the waters which were under the firmament from the waters which were above the firmament: and it was so. And God called the firmament Heaven. And the evening and the morning were the second day. And God said, Let the waters under the heaven be gathered together unto one place, and let the dry land appear: and it was so. And God called the dry land Earth; and the gathering together of the waters called he Seas: and God saw that it was good. And God said, Let the earth bring forth grass, the herb yielding seed, and the fruit tree yielding fruit after his kind, whose seed is in itself, upon the earth: and it was so. And the earth brought forth grass, and herb yielding seed after his kind, and the tree yielding fruit, whose seed was in itself, after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the third day. And God said, Let there be lights in the firmament of the heaven to divide the day from the night; and let them be for signs, and for seasons, and for days, and years: And let them be for lights in

the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth: and it was so. And God made two great lights; the greater light to rule the day, and the lesser light to rule the night: he made the stars also. And God set them in the firmament of the heaven to give light upon the earth, And to rule over the day and over the night, and to divide the light from the darkness: and God saw that it was good. And the evening and the morning were the fourth day. And God said, Let the waters bring forth abundantly the moving creature that hath life, and fowl that may fly above the earth in the open firmament of heaven. And God created great whales, and every living creature that moveth, which the waters brought forth abundantly, after their kind, and every winged fowl after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And God blessed them, saying, Be fruitful, and multiply, and fill the waters in the seas, and let fowl multiply in the earth. And the evening and the morning were the fifth day. And God said, Let the earth bring forth the living creature after his kind, cattle, and creeping thing, and beast of the earth after his kind: and it was so. And God made the beast of the earth after his kind, and cattle after their kind, and every thing that creepeth upon the earth after his kind: and God saw that it was good. And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. So God created man in his own image, in the image of God created he him; male and female created he them. And God blessed them, and God said unto them, Be fruitful, and multiply, and replenish the earth, and subdue it: and have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over

the fowl of the air, and over every living thing that moveth upon the earth. And God said, Behold, I have given you every herb bearing seed, which is upon the face of all the earth, and every tree, in the which is the fruit of a tree yielding seed; to you it shall be for meat. And to every beast of the earth, and to every fowl of the air, and to every thing that creepeth upon the earth, wherein there is life, I have given every green herb for meat: and it was so. And God saw every thing that he had made, and, behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day. (Genesis 1:1-31)

Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. (Genesis 2:1-2)

Just a quick sidenote here! I have heard so many people that claim there had to be a big bang in the beginning. We can know that there was not because a day is a thousand years in our Father's eyes, each day of creation took about a thousand years. It is kind of like when a man puts his seed into a woman. Just from a little liquid of a man fertilizing the egg in a woman. It then takes around ten months to create a child. Then the child come out of the womb whole. It is not a big bang, it is a process. I have heard so many people say that our Father created man on the sixth day. And at first glance, one might think this. But if we listen to what is being said on the sixth day, we can hear Him say let us make man in our image, after our likeness. He is not saying that He is creating man, but rather making man in their image and their likeness. To understand this, we need to listen to when we are told how to pray.

PRECEPT SEVEN

And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. (Matthew 6:5-15)

When we hear the prayer, we are hearing what it means to hear in our image, in our likeness. We can hear this when we hear Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. When He said let us make man in our image on the sixth day, He was not saying that man was created on the sixth day. He was just saying let us make man in our image. Then when we go to Genesis two, we hear that He formed us from the dust, and then breathed life into us. So, we are not told when He created us.

And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. (Genesis 2:7)

In the fourth book, Jesus is here, in the chapter Building your house on the Rock, we show what I believe to be the instructions for creating the human body. This is not confirmed by our Father, but I strongly believe if we listen to everything, we are hearing the instructions for making a human.

After listening to the first six days of creation, we can see and hear that God rested on the seventh day. So, where is that seventh day? To learn this, we need to go to the book of Revelation.

And I saw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomless pit and a great chain in his hand. And he laid hold on the dragon, that old serpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thousand years, And cast him into the bottomless pit, and shut him up, and set a seal upon him, that he should deceive the nations no more, till the thousand years should be fulfilled: and after that he must be loosed a little season. And I saw thrones, and they sat upon them, and judgment was given unto them: and I saw the souls of them that were beheaded for the witness of Jesus, and for the word of God, and which had not worshipped the beast, neither his image, neither had received his mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years. But the rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished. This is the first resurrection. Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. And when the thousand years are

PRECEPT SEVEN

expired, Satan shall be loosed out of his prison, And shall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog, and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom is as the sand of the sea. And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compassed the camp of the saints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them. And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever. And I saw a great white throne, and him that sat on it, from whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them. And I saw the dead, small and great, stand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is the book of life: and the dead were judged out of those things which were written in the books, according to their works. And the sea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works. And death and hell were cast into the lake of fire. This is the second death. And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire. (Revelation20:1-15)

There is our seventh day, we are living it now. Without showing all of this again in this book, we need to remember that the serpent was bound to our belly, and we eat dust all the days of our lives. That is where Satan got bound up for the thousand years. And when our Father reveals me, he will be loosed. That happens when all eight billion people on the planet realizes that the world is going to end. Not just an end of the age as many people think. Our Father said this world will end, so it will end. The only people that are being deceived

our those that refuse to hearken to our Father's voice that they are only deceiving themselves.

This revealing will happen at the same time for all. This is where I must confess, I thought He would reveal me by having someone with a big pulpit that would read my books, and just know. Then he or she would announce on their pulpit to the world that I was here. But I have now come to the realization that when He reveals me, He will also be revealing that everybody on the planet is the One Son of God.

Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifest in these last times for you, (1 Peter 1:20)

And as it was in the days of Noe, so shall it be also in the days of the Son of man. They did eat, they drank, they married wives, they were given in marriage, until the day that Noah entered into the ark, and the flood came, and destroyed them all. Likewise also as it was in the days of Lot; they did eat, they drank, they bought, they sold, they planted, they builded; But the same day that Lot went out of Sodom it rained fire and brimstone from heaven, and destroyed them all. Even thus shall it be in the day when the Son of man is revealed. (Luke 17:26-30)

Searching what, or what manner of time the Spirit of Christ which was in them did signify, when it testified beforehand the sufferings of Christ, and the glory that should follow. Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themselves, but unto us they did minister the things, which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the gospel unto you with the Holy Ghost sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into. Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be sober, and hope to the end

PRECEPT SEVEN

for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jesus Christ; As obedient children, not fashioning yourselves according to the former lusts in your ignorance: But as he which hath called you is holy, so be ye holy in all manner of conversation; Because it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy. And if ye call on the Father, who without respect of persons judgeth according to every man's work, pass the time of your sojourning here in fear: (1 Peter 1:11-17)

And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams: And on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy: (Acts 2:17-18)

Those four sections of the Bible, pretty much tell of what will happen the day He reveals me, and that everybody that is on the planet make up the One Son of God. And I will state it again, I am no different than any other person. I am no more deserving of what He is doing with me than any other, I just happen to be the one He chose to give this world an understanding. It is the Spirit of Christ that is inside of you that will signify that this is the time of the end.

We all must have done right somewhere in the past. Before we were sent here to this planet and that is why we are reigning with Christ now. I am not going to harp on this anymore for now because we are just showing how all of this is connected. I could probably write an entire book on this topic. So, now we need to be listening to something that is said on the first day of creation that should be catching our attention.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void;

and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. (Genesis 1:1-5)

Why is the light called Day, with a capital D instead of a lower-case d? Then why is the darkness called Night, with a capital N instead of a lower-case n. Neither of these are proper nouns, but are placed at the end of the sentences. I know I am a high school dropout, but this goes against what I was taught. This is when we need to realize that the Bible refers to us as the waters.

And he saith unto me, The waters which thou sawest, where the whore sitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues. (Revelation 17:15)

For my people have committed two evils; they have forsaken me the fountain of living waters, and hewed them out cisterns, broken cisterns, that can hold no water. (Jeremiah 2:13)

The sorrows of death compassed me, and the floods of ungodly men made me afraid. (Psalm 18:4)

The floods have lifted up, O Lord, the floods have lifted up their voice; the floods lift up their waves. The Lord on high is mightier than the noise of many waters, yea, than the mighty waves of the sea. (Psalm 93:3-4)

As you can see and hear, we are the living waters that our Father moved upon. Yes, we were cast out of heaven and sent here. We were without form and full of darkness for we had transgressed our Father's law, and disrupted His perfectly functioning house. As shown in the last book, we are all partakers of our Mother spoken of in Revelation 17. We also are partakers of the beast that drew one third of the stars when he was cast to hell or earth. We will be talking more about how we came from the stars later in this book.

Then our Father created the light, or breathed part of Himself into every person that has been, or is on this earth. Some to do well and some to do evil. Remember how we went over that it is our Father that creates evil? It is Him inside of a number of people that He causes to do evil unto others. This is how God is justified. If you do something evil to someone else, He will make sure the same comes back on you. This is what we can hear when we listen to this.

Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Matthew 7:12)

Let us listen to when we are told that certain people will be sent unto some for their evil doings.

Or unto governors, as unto them that are sent by him for the punishment of evildoers, and for the praise of them that do well. (1 Peter 2:14)

Now it could be that these people that are sent by Him for the punishment of evildoers are the same people that are appointed to be disobedient.

And a stone of stumbling, and a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were appointed. (! Peter 2:8)

We do not know if God the Father that dwells inside of each person is causing some to do things in which you might consider to be wrong, or evil. That is why He encourages all to turn back to Him and His ways. But we can also know that if these people that are appointed to be disobedient, they are doing what they are supposed to be doing. And they will be rewarded for doing correctly by our Father. But at the same time, without understanding, they will also have to answer for their other transgressions.

So, now we need to listen to where we can hear where this light is talked about in the New Testament.

But of the times and the seasons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you. For yourselves know perfectly that the day of the Lord so cometh as a thief in the night. For when they shall say, Peace and safety; then sudden destruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they shall not escape. But ye, brethren, are not in darkness, that that day should overtake you as a thief. Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night, nor of darkness. Therefore let us not sleep, as do others; but let us watch and be sober. For they that sleep sleep in the night; and they that be drunken are drunken in the night. But let us, who are of the day, be sober, putting on the breastplate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of salvation. (1 Thessalonians 5:1-8)

There is the children of the Day, and there is the children of the Night that was created on the first day of creation. The children of darkness are the ones that will do evil unto others so that the children of the light, or of the day can be chastised and led back to our Father and His ways. This is what we are being told when we listen to this.

And it shall come to pass in the last days, that the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in

PRECEPT SEVEN

the top of the mountains, and shall be exalted above the hills; and all nations shall flow unto it. And many people shall go and say, Come ye, and let us go up to the mountain of the Lord, to the house of the God of Jacob; and he will teach us of his ways, and we will walk in his paths: for out of Zion shall go forth the law, and the word of the Lord from Jerusalem. And he shall judge among the nations, and shall rebuke many people: and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more. (Isaiah 2:2-4)

We have gone over a few ways of hearing this engrafted word. Now we are going to listen to a couple of times when we are told to do something. Not in a hidden way or manner that we need to connect anything. We just need to listen to what we are being told and realize that this is not what man teaches. First let us listen to when our Father tells us that He never commanded us to sacrifice animals.

Hear the word of the Lord, ye rulers of Sodom; give ear unto the law of our God, ye people of Gomorrah. To what purpose is the multitude of your sacrifices unto me? saith the Lord: I am full of the burnt offerings of rams, and the fat of fed beasts; and I delight not in the blood of bullocks, or of lambs, or of he goats. When ye come to appear before me, who hath required this at your hand, to tread my courts? Bring no more vain oblations; incense is an abomination unto me; the new moons and sabbaths, the calling of assemblies, I cannot away with; it is iniquity, even the solemn meeting. Your new moons and your appointed feasts my soul hateth: they are a trouble unto me; I am weary to bear them. And when ye spread forth your hands, I will hide mine eyes from you: yea, when ye

make many prayers, I will not hear: your hands are full of blood. Wash you, make you clean; put away the evil of your doings from before mine eyes; cease to do evil; Learn to do well; seek judgment, relieve the oppressed, judge the fatherless, plead for the widow. (Isaiah 1:10-17)

He never told anyone to sacrifice animals of any kind. But if you ask anyone in the man-made churches, they will tell you the God of the Old Testament sacrificed animals. I am confused then, isn't this in the Old Testament? We explained this in the second book, Behold a greater than Jonas is here. I went through the same spiritual sacrifice of my first-born son. One of my brothers of the flesh wound up being the ram with his horns stuck in the thistle of the bushes.

As explained in the second book, we are the beast in which the kings that have dominion over our bodies sacrifice. This is one way our Father talks to us. He might have someone do something to you that might make you mad. Let us just think of you maybe doing a little over the speed limit, enough that you could get a ticket. Then someone cuts you off and makes you slow down quite a bit. You might get mad, but then when you go down the road a half mile or so, you see a cop sitting off to the side, watching for speeding vehicles. Would you still be mad? That sacrifice that was made, made you mad. You can say that maybe this made you so mad that it burned, that is what the burnt sacrifices are about. Have you ever heard the saying, burned didn't' it? We will be talking about us being in hell in a minute.

Remember just a bit ago, we were talking about us being the temple of God? I want to take a minute to show that we are to build a spiritual house with spiritual sacrifices.

Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house, an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ. (1 Peter 2:5)

Now let us listen to when we are told to be without spot or blemish.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Wherefore, beloved, seeing that ye look for such things, be diligent that ye may be found of him in peace, without spot, and blameless. (2 Peter 3:14)

That he might present it to himself a glorious church, not having spot, or wrinkle, or any such thing; but that it should be holy and without blemish. (Ephesians 5:27)

Now let us listen to how some people are spots and or blemishes.

Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and perished in the gainsaying of Core. These are spots in your feasts of charity, when they feast with you, feeding themselves without fear: clouds they are without water, carried about of winds; trees whose fruit withereth, without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots; (Jude 1:11-12)

Now I want to show when they were told to make sacrifices in the books of Moses.

Ye shall offer at your own will a male without blemish, of the beeves, of the sheep, or of the goats. (Leviticus 22:19)

If his offering be a burnt sacrifice of the herd, let him offer a male without blemish: he shall offer it of his own voluntary will at the door of the tabernacle of the congregation before the Lord. (Leviticus 1:3)

We are showing how we are not to have spot or blemish, just the same as God told Moses, that the sacrifices to be made, need to be without blemish. That day I got stopped was not because I was driving incorrectly, but the Father needed that to be done so that I would publish the book.

Let us listen to when we are told how to fast. I have not heard of anyone knowing what a true fast is.

Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and shew my people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins. Yet they seek me daily, and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness, and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice; they take delight in approaching to God. Wherefore have we fasted, say they, and thou seest not? wherefore have we afflicted our soul, and thou takest no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast ye find pleasure, and exact all your labours. Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the Lord? Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the Lord shall be thy reward. Then shalt thou call, and the Lord shall answer; thou shalt cry, and he shall say, Here I am. If thou take away from the midst of thee the yoke, the putting forth of the finger, and speaking vanity; (Isaiah 58:1-9)

There is a true fast that our Father commands. Ask any man-made church and they will tell you that a biblical fast is going without food or something of the sort. God never told us to starve ourselves. When we starve ourselves of food, we weaken our muscles, immune system, and usually have problems thinking of anything but food. When we do this, we make so that we cannot do the true fast in which is to help others. Lighten the load, metaphorically speaking. Feed the poor, help the needy, etc. We do all of this for others for no reward. We just do it for the love of God and others. That is a true fast.

Now we are going to talk about how we are in hell now. It seems that everybody thinks that hell is something that is coming after we die. But the Bible never said this. Let us listen to one verse which tells us that we are in hell now.

And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. (Matthew 10:28)

We can know that this refers to the one that created you and everyone else. But how is He going to destroy your body in hell if you are not already in hell? Now I could go on and show you all a lot of areas referring to us walking through a spiritual fire. But I have covered this in many of the books we have written. And I refuse to try to reexplain things over and over in each book. If you want to understand this better, I strongly suggest reading the second book, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here. But we are going to show one are in the beginning of the Bible that is telling us that we are going to have to go through fire to get back to the garden of Eden.

And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he

placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. (Genesis 3:22-24)

Can you hear how our Father sent us away from the garden of Eden? Then He placed a flaming sword which turned every way. This is Him telling us that if we ever want to get back to this garden, we are going to have to go through this fire. This is what I mean when I say we must hear what is not being said at the same time we are hearing what is being said. Now we are going to listen to a few times of something that we can call this fire, without it being called fire.

And not only so, but we glory in tribulations also: knowing that tribulation worketh patience; (Romans 5:3)

Wherefore I desire that ye faint not at my tribulations for you, which is your glory. (Ephesians 3:13)

So that we ourselves glory in you in the churches of God for your patience and faith in all your persecutions and tribulations that ye endure: (2 Thessalonians 1:4)

That no man should be moved by these afflictions: for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto. For verily, when we were with you, we told you before that we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass, and ye know. For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vain. (1 Thessalonians 3:3-5)

Confirming the souls of the disciples, and exhorting them to continue in the faith, and that we must through much tribulation enter into the kingdom of God. (Acts 14:22)

PRECEPT SEVEN

Any time we can hear about tribulations, temptations of our faith, and persecutions, we can know that this is some sort of fire that we must go through. Any time we are going through something that makes us feel anything but perfect, we are going through some kind of spiritual fire. The further away from perfect you are feeling, the hotter the flame is.

Now I am going to comment about something that might bother you. I am going to be talking about those that commit suicide. These are people that are walking through a fire and that can't handle the heat. Or it could be the Father that is inside of them that causes them to do such, so that the flames for someone close to them, can be turned up in heat. I know that there have been many times that I have thought about it myself. But I am always reminded of this when I start to think about it.

For to me to live is Christ, and to die is gain. But if I live in the flesh, this is the fruit of my labour: yet what I shall choose I wot not. For I am in a strait betwixt two, having a desire to depart, and to be with Christ; which is far better: Nevertheless to abide in the flesh is more needful for you. (Philippians 1:21-24)

By no means am I trying to justify my vein thoughts when I have these thoughts, but sometimes I just get so tired of nobody ever reading the books that we have written. Yes, I know that I must suffer many things and be rejected by this generation first, but I sometimes think that I have been rejected long enough.

For as the lightning, that lighteneth out of the one part under heaven, shineth unto the other part under heaven; so shall also the Son of man be in his day. But first must he suffer many things, and be rejected of this generation. (Luke 17:24-25)

This leads us into me be put to death in the flesh. Now that we are all realizing that the entire Bible is not a book about the past, we should be realizing that the whole purpose of this is so that our Father could use one of us, that being me, to give this world an understanding of Him and His ways. And the only way that He could do this is by having me physically give up the ways of this world so that I could learn of Him and His ways. This is what we are hearing when we listen to this.

For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:
(1 Peter 3:18)

This is what happened back in March of 2016, I heard the engrafted word in which allowed me to believe that I needed to give everything I owned away to the poor and needy, including all monies. I took nothing but the clothes on my back out into the wilderness to die. At the time, I thought I was physically supposed to die, but shortly after coming back, our Father let me know that it was a spiritual death and not a physical death. For more details on me doing this, I strongly suggest you reading the fourth book, Jesus is here.

We will be talking more later in this book on be born again. I have heard so many people say that they are a born-again Christian, but yet nothing in their life changed. When I gave everything away and walked out into the wilderness to die, I gave up the ways of this world, and was born into the spiritual world. No, you all will not have to do exactly as I did, but you will need to give up some ways of the flesh.

But it was after I did this that I became obsessed with listening the King James Version of the Bible. This is when our Father started teaching me His ways. Precept upon precept, line upon line, a little here, and a little there. This was and is the process of being quickened by the Spirit. This quickening does not come by just thinking of the scriptures on certain days. This quickening does not come because we try to please men rather than God. This quickening does not

come by only looking for the scriptures that will please the flesh. This quickening does not come by thinking that our Father is cruel, mean, or vindictive. This quickening does not come by thinking that we must research outside of the Bible to understand what the Bible is saying. This quickening comes by devoting every living second to Him and learning of Him and His ways. This quickening comes by loving Him with all of your heart, soul, and mind. And of course, loving everyone else, (neighbor).

This leads us to the last way of hearing the engrafted word in which we are going to share in this chapter. The best, but hardest way to hear this engrafted word is by meditating on the King James Version of the Bible. All day, every day. Yes, this is hard because from my experience, I only do this because I have listened to the King James Version of the Bible well over fifty times. I became obsessed with it the first time I listened to it. And because I have listened to it so many times, it is all I think about. It does not matter what I am doing, I am connected with the scriptures. Everything I see, everything I hear, everything I feel, everything that I am doing, I am connecting it to the scriptures one way or another.

We have encouraged you all to listen the Bible in several of the books. In the fifth book, *At Midnight I Will Rise*, we even challenged you all to listen to it just one time. Starting with Genesis and going all the way through the book of Revelation. This is extremely powerful if you do this. If you decide to do this, let me warn you now, your life will change. I am not talking about listening to it while your playing a game or something. Not listening to it when your doing something that keeps you distracted. I am talking about listening to it intensely. Yes, most of my listening came as I was driving, but the first three or four times I listened to it was with it playing within arm's reach, or with headphones on. The first few times I listened to it was by BibleGateway and the internet. Then after I got some money built back up, I started to buy it on CD. When you listen, commit to listening. You most likely will not understand a lot, but you will be scared away from it if you are not committed.

The first time I listened to it was because the Father kept putting it on my conscience that faith comes by hearing the word of God.

So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.(Romans 10:17)

So, I opened up BibleGateway and listened to it while I sat right in front of the computer and read as I listened to the entire Bible. This is when I heard the engrafted word in which made me feel I needed to give everything away and go out into the wilderness to die. I am not saying that you will feel the same way, but I am saying your life will change. As explained in previous books, I have watched one of my brothers listen to the first four books of Moses, and he quit listening to it because of the changes that he just automatically started feeling that he needed change what he eats. It is extremely powerful, but you cannot go wrong by committing to it and listening to it all the way through. And if you can stomach the changes that you will be starting to change, listen to it again and again. Just make sure it is the King James Version and no other.

As shown in the last book, it is because of how I am meditating on what the Father had the holy men write, all the time, I am speaking with the Father in His language. And as He had me show you all in the last book, Declaring the end from the beginning, I am sitting on His right side in the heavenly places.

Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, (Ephesians 1:20)

Everything about me is blue and white, just as it looks when we look to the heavens on a clear day. And the entire purpose of this book is to show you all how the powers of heaven are getting ready to be shaken. As shown in the last book, the more time we spend meditating in the scriptures, we are spiritually being elevated to a level of heaven because it was our heavenly Father, that actually wrote the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible.

By Wisdom, The World Knew Not God

This will be a relatively short chapter. But at the same time, this is something that we have pointed out in several of the books. This chapter will burn for those that are wise. All those people with all of their degrees and such. You will be learning that all we need to do to get to know our Father, is hearken to Him and His voice. No one else's. Let us listen to the section of the Bible that this chapter is based off of.

For the preaching of the cross is to them that perish foolishness; but unto us which are saved it is the power of God. For it is written, I will destroy the wisdom of the wise, and will bring to nothing the understanding of the prudent. Where is the wise? where is the scribe? where is the disputer of this world? hath not God made foolish the wisdom of this world? For after that in the wisdom of God the world by wisdom knew not God, it pleased God by the foolishness of preaching to save them that believe. For the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks seek after wisdom: But we preach Christ crucified, unto the Jews a stumblingblock, and unto the Greeks foolishness; But unto them which are called, both Jews and Greeks, Christ the power of God, and the wisdom of God. Because the foolishness of God is wiser than men; and the weakness of God is stronger than men. For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are

called: But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; And base things of the world, and things which are despised, hath God chosen, yea, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are: (1 Corinthians 1:18-28)

This is where I brag about me only having a ninth-grade education. I do have a G. E. D. but I never finished the tenth grade, so in retrospect, I only have a ninth grade-grade education. I tried college two time, and technical schooling once. I quit those as well and wound up only paying back student loans. I have driven a semi-truck most of my adult life. I am just a plain and simple man.

There is this well-known late-night radio program that I used to listen to on a regular basis. This is the same radio program that the Father used to call be to the Bible as explained in previous books. I used to call in and try to rush in some of the Bible knowledge that I have, but nobody ever seems to care. I truly feel it is because the knowledge I share goes against the ways of this world and people just are not ready for it. I don't listen to it much anymore because I have come to realize that the only people they interview on that program are people with lots of credentials. I am talking about people with high level degrees. Things like bachelor's degrees, master's degrees, science degrees, or people that are very knowledgeable in a lot of areas and documentation to show this.

And I have talked about me not having an education in previous books, but when our Father told me to do a chapter on this, it dawned on me that the only reason that I know our Father and the King James Version of the Bible, is because I don't have the wisdom that these people do.

To give an illustration of this, I am going to tell you about a conversation I had earlier today with a fellow servant. Every time I would mention a verse of King James Version of the Bible, he would cut me off, and then proceed to tell me about the books that were

taken out of the Bible, and why certain people wanted taken out. Then he would talk about pagans and such. I pointed out that the Bible never talks about the pagans. But then he would say that it did, we just need to learn what pagans are and relate that to the Bible. No, I am not going to go read about something that is not in the Bible, and then see if I can relate it to the Bible. Every time I would say something about the Bible and what we can hear, he would come back with some sort of way that we need to learn something else about the Bible, and then that would help us understand the Bible. He is very knowledgeable, doesn't listen to anything that our Father is saying. Don't get me wrong, I was able to show him a few things that he never understood with him telling me that, that would be why certain things are not in the Bible. Things like the date of the birth and date of Jesus. But his knowledge is so wide, that I think it would be hard for him to just stop thinking about everything he knows about the Bible, and just listen to what our Father is saying.

Back when our Father first called me to the Bible back in 2011, I would listen to some programs that explained the books of Moses. This is where all the law is, and when I was a rookie, so to speak, I would use any and all means available to help me to try to obey all of the laws of Moses. Then about six months before we wrote the first book, Father, forgive, us, we haven't been listening, someone asked me why I would listen to certain things while I drove. They asked this because I would get back from work every day and complain about how these teachers would teach something other than what the Bible would say. And that was when I quit listening to these programs. I was well past the stage of learning the holy days listed in Leviticus twenty-three. I had finished reading the Bible for the second time by then. When I truly think about it, I was even lining my life up with the scriptures back then. So, I took it personal when these teachers would teach something that was clearly not in the Bible.

Then when I started listening to the Bible, I continued to take it personal. I truly felt as if the Father was talking to me directly. It is like having a one-on-one connection with something that was written hundreds of years ago.

Today, I still take it personal when I hear how far away from the truth people are when they talk about the Bible and our Father. In fact, this is usually the reason that I throw my temper tantrums. Not because I want the day of the Lord to come quickly, but rather I want to hear someone other than myself that understands things the way that I do. People have got to get over thinking that the Bible is a book of history and realize that a lot of the Bible is prophecy of what would happen in our lifetimes.

This is where we explain how the wisdom of the world made it so that they knew not God. There are a lot of very smart people in this world today. Now I am not referring to people that have no interest in the Bible. I am referring to all the people that have an interest in the Bible, they read it, and think that they must learn more about the Bible. Or maybe even people that claim to want to understand the Bible, obtain a lot of knowledge by other people that have a lot of knowledge of the Bible and the things surrounding the Bible.

This is where I need to reflect back to shortly after the Father called me to the Bible back in 2011. I read it for the first time and heard some things that made me feel as if it was talking about my very own life. I have explained this in previous books, so I will not try to explain it again now. Then shortly after getting baptized with water, I started pointing things out that the pastor of the church was teaching incorrectly.

I was and am able to see and hear things that others couldn't and still cannot.

But blessed are your eyes, for they see: and your ears, for they hear. For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous men have desired to see those things which ye see, and have not seen them; and to hear those things which ye hear, and have not heard them. (Matthew 13:16-17)

Yes, as explained in previous books, this is how that Father kicked me out of man-made churches. Unknowingly at the time, that was Him

telling me that He was going to be teaching the Bible His ways, and not mans. But because I could see and hear things others couldn't, I thought about going to some sort of Bible college because I felt I had a particular gift or something like that.

After a few weeks of thinking about this, I decided against it. As stated above, I had dropped out of three colleges already, but this was something that was a little different. Then I realized that I would have to lie in order to get a degree in this field, or I would just drop out and wind up paying for another student load, There was no way that I could see, or even imagine Jesus being God the Father. There was absolutely no way that I was going to, or am I going to say that there is any kind of rapture. So, in retrospect, there was no way of passing this course because that is what the courses teaches.

And I also remembered that the scriptures teach that the path to life is straight and narrow, and only a few find it. I figured if this is what everybody is doing, there must be something that is not right about it.

Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. Beware of false prophets, which come to you in sheep's clothing, but inwardly they are ravening wolves. (Matthew 7:13-15)

As the Father had me show in the last book, Declaring the end from the beginning, He is the one that caused me to drop out of school. He is the one that told me that I was going to drive truck for a living. He is the one that caused me to drop of the three colleges. He is the one that kept me away from the Bible until I was forty-one years old. He did all of this so that I would not obtain wisdom until He called me to the Bible in 2011. Yes, this is how I knew no sin.

For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him. (2 Corinthians 5:21)

Then as explained in the fifth book, At midnight I will rise, we did a chapter one the sin of the world. Showing that the sin of the world is that the world refuses to listen to Him. Hence, the name of the first book, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening.

But there are so many people that will read the Bible, not understand what they read, and go on the hunt for other books that man has written about the Bible. They will go to these theologian classes and think because that is what they teach, that must be the way it is. Then they will venture out and seek more knowledge about the Bible by any means available but the King James Version of the Bible.

Now I am going to reflect back to when I went to Israel for the second time back in 2018. I was out walking the streets one evening and I ran into a fellow servant of God. Obviously, we were talking about the Bible and certain things that we had seen or done over there. This man was very well versed, and obtained a lot of knowledge about Bibles. Yes, you heard me correctly. As we were talking, he thought that he was the reincarnated Jesus. I knew he wasn't but I was also interested to learn of what knowledge he did have. I knew who I was, but I was not given the commandment to make my name known yet.

When I said I knew he was not, there were two dead give aways from just looking at him. He was clean shaven, and he had short hair. Because I knew and know the scriptures so well, I knew that he had no fear of God.

Ye shall not round the corners of your heads,
neither shalt thou mar the corners of thy beard.
(Leviticus 19:27)

He wanted to be a reincarnated Jesus so that he could change our perfect Father and earn the respect of people, not God.

PRECEPT SEVEN

For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God. (John 12:43)

Then he called some kind of teacher in Israel, rabbi. I Immediately asked him why he called anyone rabbi when the scriptures teach against this. He pulled out his phone, that had several different versions of the Bible apps on it. He started to tell me that Jesus called people rabbi and I immediately told him that we are told not to call anyone rabbi, even Christ.

But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, even Christ; and all ye are brethren. And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven. Neither be ye called masters: for one is your Master, even Christ. (Matthew 23:8-10)

I told him to look this up in the King James Version of the Bible. He did and it stopped him in his tracks. He could now hear what the scriptures were saying. There is the key. People refuse to listen to the scriptures of the King James Version of the Bible. People think that they must find out everything they can about the Bible instead of just listening to our Father.

This is how I can feel the sin of the world. As explained in the fifth book, At midnight I will rise, there is a chapter called The Sin Of The World. People think that by learning everything about the Bible is going to teach them the Bible, but the only way we can learn the Bible is by listening to what our Father is saying. Not what everybody else is saying about what He is saying, it is by listening to Him and Him only and what He is saying. When one really thinks about, this almost sounds like some think they can learn of the Bible by the gossip of the Bible. Because all other books about the Bible are not the Bible itself.

This is when we need to listen to what Jesus tells us.

At that time Jesus answered and said, I thank thee, O Father, Lord of heaven and earth, because thou hast

hid these things from the wise and prudent, and hast revealed them unto babes. (Matthew 11:25)

When people read this, they think that they need to go somewhere other than the Bible to find out what is hidden. This is how smart our Father is, He put everything right in front of you. But because He had the holy men say that it is hidden from the wise and the prudent, they think it is hidden in other books. And because there a lot of people that can learn so much from reading these books, their knowledge keeps them from knowing our Father.

As we have been learning, our Father is dwelling inside each and every one of us. Every time someone thinks that they can learn about our Father and His Bible by seeking Him out somewhere other than the Bible, He will throw them a bone. Obviously I am speaking metaphorically. But our Father will give them something to chase that will keep them away from getting to know Him.

I can say this with all certainty because I have told you all that I do not have a good education. I have driven truck most of my adult life. But the two things I do know, are the King James Version of the Bible and our Father. Not because I thought I needed to seek Him anywhere other than the Bible. Not because I would let man teach me. But because since He first called me to the Bible, I took it personal, and sought out the truth through the King James Version of the Bible and Him only.

I read the Bible twice. Then I read the book of Enock once, as explained in previous books. Then I started to listen to the Bible via internet or CD. I have listened to the Bible well over fifty times. Why, because each time I would listen to it, our Father would show me more. And because I seek Him and Him only, He has allowed me to get to know Him. Get to know what He is all about, and to know why He is doing what He is doing. And most importantly, He has allowed me to understand what He is doing.

And over the years of me seeking Him and Him only, He has allowed us to become One. And this is why I take it so personally

today, we are One, and I feel what the Father does when He states that people listen to their imagination instead of Him.

This evil people, which refuse to hear my words, which walk in the imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them, shall even be as this girdle, which is good for nothing. (Jeremiah 13:10)

We do not become one with the Father by seeking Him out in other words that were written about Him by man. This is where a lot of you all are thinking that this book is written by man, yes it is, I am still in the flesh. And I have asked the Father about this. His reply is that all of the books we have written show nothing but scriptures from the King James Version of the Bible. The Bible that was published four hundred years before He called me to the Bible. And all of my knowledge comes from this Bible and not the bibles that were written by man because they could not understand, or didn't like what the King James Version of the Bible said.

I have heard so many people say that the King James Version of the Bible cannot be trusted because it is not complete anymore, or that they have taken chapter, or books out of it. This is where we need to realize the power of God the Father. God the Father is dwelling inside of each person on the planet. He has been inside of every person that has ever been on the planet. When He caused certain people to remove things from the Bible, He did it so that He could keep things hidden right in front of you. Maybe these books contained a little too much so that the wise and prudent would be able to understand Him better. And this would allow them to get closer to His house without going through the proper procedure. Then He would have to kick you back out of His house because you got there by cheating, or stealing your way in instead of seeking Him without all your heart, soul, mind, and strength.

Here is where I give you all another way of hearing the engrafted word. As we showed you all in the last book, Declaring The End From

The Beginning, when you read these books, I do not speak in parables. I give you all an understanding of what the King James Version of the Bible is saying. When you read these books, you are getting the engrafted word knitted together. We close the gaps so that you all do not have to connect them throughout the Bible. And if you have read several of these books in which we have written, you will start meditating on the scriptures the way I do.

Now we are going to be showing how my lack of knowledge makes it easier for people to understand what I am trying to say. This is going to be talking about talking in tongues, but then listen how it shows how Paul is saying that he would rather speak five words with his understanding than ten thousand words of an unknown tongue.

Follow after charity, and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that ye may prophesy. For he that speaketh in an unknown tongue speaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man understandeth him; howbeit in the spirit he speaketh mysteries. But he that prophesieth speaketh unto men to edification, and exhortation, and comfort. He that speaketh in an unknown tongue edifieth himself; but he that prophesieth edifieth the church. I would that ye all spake with tongues but rather that ye prophesied: for greater is he that prophesieth than he that speaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying. Now, brethren, if I come unto you speaking with tongues, what shall I profit you, except I shall speak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by prophesying, or by doctrine? And even things without life giving sound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a distinction in the sounds, how shall it be known what is piped or harped? For if the trumpet give an uncertain sound, who shall prepare himself to the battle? So likewise ye, except ye utter by the tongue words easy to be understood, how shall

PRECEPT SEVEN

it be known what is spoken? for ye shall speak into the air. There are, it may be, so many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them is without signification. Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I shall be unto him that speaketh a barbarian, and he that speaketh shall be a barbarian unto me. Even so ye, forasmuch as ye are zealous of spiritual gifts, seek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church. Wherefore let him that speaketh in an unknown tongue pray that he may interpret. For if I pray in an unknown tongue, my spirit prayeth, but my understanding is unfruitful. What is it then? I will pray with the spirit, and I will pray with the understanding also: I will sing with the spirit, and I will sing with the understanding also. Else when thou shalt bless with the spirit, how shall he that occupieth the room of the unlearned say Amen at thy giving of thanks, seeing he understandeth not what thou sayest? For thou verily givest thanks well, but the other is not edified. I thank my God, I speak with tongues more than ye all: Yet in the church I had rather speak five words with my understanding, that by my voice I might teach others also, than ten thousand words in an unknown tongue. (1 Corinthians 14:1-19)

I have talked with several people that use big words that I have no idea of what they mean. Sometimes I will interrupt them and ask what that means, but most of the time I will just guess. They use big fancy words, I don't, I use simple words that are easy to understand. I do not know any fancy words, so by my lack of knowledge, I am easier to understand.

I Will Leave The Light On For You

This is a chapter that is inspired by a song that I hear on the radio now and again. It is by a rock and roll group, but this song has a slower tempo to it. Something that I brought up in the first book was that we should not be judging anyone for whatever type of music they listen to, and through this chapter, you will be learning why.

I bring this up right away because I am sure some of you are thinking that I listen to rock and roll, so I must be evil. I laugh at the thoughts you are having. I remember years ago, and I mean over twenty years ago, people used to take rock and roll music, play it backwards and say that there was subliminal messaging in there. Which meant that people that listened to rock and roll, worshipped Satan. Well let me say this, there are on average two to four hundred words per song. I learn this just by doing a quick google search. Without searching what different types of music, we can safely figure this is about average for any type of song. Let us just use an example of a song with two hundred words, play it all backwards, and you will hear all kinds of different words. And if I was a betting man, and I am, I bet you will find some kind of subliminal message of some sort in any song.

When one does this, they are looking down on others and thinking that they are better than others. We are not God the Father, but God the Father dwells inside each of us. As shown in previous books, everybody on the planet has their own different laws, rules, judgments, testimonies, ordinances, and commandments. Why so you think our Father would have us make different types of music? It is certain music relates to each of us in different ways. How can anyone be wrong for listening to what makes them feel good, or relaxes them.

Should everyone look the same as well? Should we all drive the same type of vehicle? Should we all live in the exact same type of house throughout the world? Should we all only eat what everybody else eats? Or maybe only have an option of four or five things to eat for our entire lifetime?

Now let us just say hypothetically, that maybe someone is sinning by listening to a certain kind of music. Who are we to judge anyone, there is not one of that has not sinned. So, each of us is just as guilty as the next. And when we don't judge or try to stop someone from sinning, we will be rewarded for it.

Blessed is the man that walketh not in the counsel of the ungodly, nor standeth in the way of sinners, nor sitteth in the seat of the scornful. (Psalm 1:1)

This does not say blessed is the man that stands in the way of sinners. Blessed are we when we do not stand in the way of sinners. Let the Father be the judge, and let Him take vengeance if vengeance is due. He is perfect and knows what He is doing, let Him take care of all.

Now I will say that some of the rock and roll that I do listen to does have swear words in it. And because I like to sing along, I have gotten into the habit of swearing. Over the past few weeks, I have been trying to listen to a little more country music. This is one way of me repenting. Because the swearing coming out of my mouth, just doesn't feel right. And I am sure it is our Father telling my conscience to clean it up.

I want to bring something else up before we dive deep into this chapter. The back cover. The Father sent me to Alaska recently to get a picture for the front cover of this book. Yes, the front cover seems to go along with the theme of this book, but yet the back cover seems to go along with this chapter. Those bright lights that you see on the lower right, those are not man made. That is from the Northern lights in the sky. I have some other pictures with the same effect, but from a camera phone. There are many trees lit up the same, but that picture

did not have high enough resolution. The front and back covers were taken by a professional photographer. Those bright lights on the back cover shows how the light is still on. Even though when those pictures were taken, it was pitch black outside.

Now back to this song, I have named this chapter the name of this song. Because I truly feel when I listen to this song, it is the Father saying that He has left the light on for us. I have heard one of the band members stating that he wrote the songs for his sons. Stating that the light would always be on for them if they drift too far into the darkness.

Yes, a lot if the lyrics of this song contains words that I just put in the last two sentences. Can you hear how and why this makes me think of the scriptures? I was listening to it a couple of weeks ago, and thought, I should do a chapter on this. No, not on the song, but on how our Father has left the light on for all of us.

Now before I go any further, I want to mention something. I want to let you all know that I do hear a lot of rock and roll songs that make me think of the scriptures. We all ready know this one, but let me just name a few. When angels fall, Fallen, Devil, I will now Bow, Wash it all away, Welcome to the Circus, Judas, so many more. I wouls say that about ninety percent of the songs that I hear, make me think of the scriptures one way or another. And about half of these songss line up with the scriptures pretty well. I sometims wonder I the Father inside these members of the bands, know what they are saying when they sing these songs.

We went over how we are the darkness that was upon the earth on the first day of creation a couple of chapters ago, and how our Father created the light, and called it Day. But as when listen to the scriptures we can know that many have fallen away from this light because they would rather dwell in darkness.

And this is the condemnation, that light is come into the world, and men loved darkness rather than light, because their deeds were evil. (John 3:19)

This is when people would rather listen to their imagination instead of listening to our Father. Yes, it can be a beautiful sunny day, and you can still be walking in total darkness. If you are walking with the ways of the world, you are walking in total darkness.

This is something that was pointed out in the fifth book, *At midnight I will rise*, in the chapter called the *Walking Dead*. But with a different target of pointing out. When people are walking in total darkness, they are walking dead. Even though your heart is beating, your blood is flowing throughout your body, and you are breathing oxygen, if you're coming to the light, you're walking dead. In total darkness even though you can physically see things from miles away.

This is when we need to listen to what is being said in the book of James.

My brethren, have not the faith of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Lord of glory, with respect of persons. For if there come unto your assembly a man with a gold ring, in goodly apparel, and there come in also a poor man in vile raiment; And ye have respect to him that weareth the gay clothing, and say unto him, Sit thou here in a good place; and say to the poor, Stand thou there, or sit here under my footstool: Are ye not then partial in yourselves, and are become judges of evil thoughts? Hearken, my beloved brethren, Hath not God chosen the poor of this world rich in faith, and heirs of the kingdom which he hath promised to them that love him? But ye have despised the poor. Do not rich men oppress you, and draw you before the judgment seats? Do not they blaspheme that worthy name by the which ye are called? If ye fulfil the royal law according to the scripture, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself, ye do well: But if ye have respect to persons, ye commit sin, and are convinced of the law as transgressors. For whosoever shall keep the whole law, and yet offend in one point, he is guilty

of all. For he that said, Do not commit adultery, said also, Do not kill. Now if thou commit no adultery, yet if thou kill, thou art become a transgressor of the law. So speak ye, and so do, as they that shall be judged by the law of liberty. For he shall have judgment without mercy, that hath shewed no mercy; and mercy rejoiceth against judgment. What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him? If a brother or sister be naked, and destitute of daily food, And one of you say unto them, Depart in peace, be ye warmed and filled; notwithstanding ye give them not those things which are needful to the body; what doth it profit? Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works. Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. (James 2:1-26)

There are so many that I have talked to that claim that they have faith, but this faith is easily disputed or known to be faith without

works because of the way they talk. I am not talking about cursing, but rather how important man-made holidays and birthdays are. They talk about how I supposedly came hear a couple of thousand years ago and set them free of all sin. They talk about how I supposedly changed the law of our Father. They talk about how the God of the Old Testament was cruel, mean, and vindictive. What I am trying to say, is I can immediately tell if someone believes in the God that raised me from the dead, or they believe in a false God that makes their lives easier, or more convenient. Their faith is dead. What are the two greatest commandments?

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36-40)

Where is the love of God with all the heart, soul, and mind in doing or having any of the works that I was just talking about? Before we go any further, I am sure there are some of you thinking that I shouldn't be saying things like this, but let me remind you, I speak that the works of the world are evil.

The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, because I testify of it, that the works thereof are evil. (John 7:7)

And I am the stone of stumbling and rock of offense. As talked about in previous books, I do not water anything down. I do not add or take away from the King James Version of the Bible. I do not cut corners. I teach boldly, and stand firm of what I teach because our Father has been teaching me this way. And as shown in the last book, Declaring

the end from the beginning, I am now the walking Word of God.
And the word of God is sharper than any two edged sword.

Wherefore also it is contained in the scripture,
Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner stone, elect,
precious: and he that believeth on him shall not be
confounded. Unto you therefore which believe he is
precious: but unto them which be disobedient, the
stone which the builders disallowed, the same is made
the head of the corner, And a stone of stumbling, and
a rock of offence, even to them which stumble at the
word, being disobedient: whereunto also they were
appointed. (1 Peter 2:6-8)

For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and
sharper than any two edged sword, piercing even to
the dividing asunder of soul and spirit, and of the
joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts
and intents of the heart. (Hebrews 4:12)

Here is the catch, our Father has intended for the world to walk in
darkness. He has not wanted man to know His works from the time
of the beginning until the time of the end.

He hath made every thing beautiful in his time: also
he hath set the world in their heart, so that no man
can find out the work that God maketh from the
beginning to the end. (Ecclesiastes 3:11)

Why? Because this is not supposed to be a place that we can
automatically just get back into heaven once we die. We all have
transgressed His law as we just read and heard in the second book of
James. Remember He is always testing our hearts, so that He can see
who will be for Him and who will not.

PRECEPT SEVEN

The heart is deceitful above all things, and desperately wicked: who can know it? I the Lord search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings. (Jeremiah 17:9-10)

But here is the good news. And no, I am not talking about how some false god that came here in the past and died for your sins and you can do whatever now. The good news is that our Father has left the light on for all of us. That light is still on if we decide to go back to it. Yes, this is that light that He created on the first day of creation.

Just a sidenote here. Did you know that the spirit of a man is the candle of the Lord, and that we are to keep that we are to keep this candle lit at all times.

The spirit of man is the candle of the Lord, searching all the inward parts of the belly.(Proverbs 20:27)

Command Aaron and his sons, saying, This is the law of the burnt offering: It is the burnt offering, because of the burning upon the altar all night unto the morning, and the fire of the altar shall be burning in it. And the priest shall put on his linen garment, and his linen breeches shall he put upon his flesh, and take up the ashes which the fire hath consumed with the burnt offering on the altar, and he shall put them beside the altar. And he shall put off his garments, and put on other garments, and carry forth the ashes without the camp unto a clean place. And the fire upon the altar shall be burning in it; it shall not be put out: and the priest shall burn wood on it every morning, and lay the burnt offering in order upon it; and he shall burn thereon the fat of the peace offerings. The fire shall ever be burning upon the altar; it shall never go out. (Leviticus 6:9-13)

As we showed you all in the fourth book, Jesus is here, in the chapter Building your house on the Rock, the alters that we make spiritual sacrifices are on our hearts.

Ye also, as lively stones, are built up a spiritual house,
an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices,
acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.(1 Peter2:5)

This fire that is supposed to be continuously burning, is the invisible rays of love for God the Father first, and then your neighbor at all times. The same love God the Father showed all of us in the very beginning. He could have just said you all have transgressed my law, and I am done with you. He could have said there will never be a chance of you all getting back into my house for all eternity. But He didn't, He breathed part of Himself into each of us knowing that there would be a day that some of us, the remnant, would turn back to Him, and His ways.

Now if we recall, back in the days of Noah, the Father was done with the entire world. He had enough of how man listened to their imagination instead of Him.

And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in
the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts
of his heart was only evil continually. (Genesis 6:5)

We are at that time once again; our Father is bringing this world to an end because it is no different now, as it was in the days of Noah. But He did leave the world a remnant. This remnant is the light that He has left on.

Except the Lord of hosts had left unto us a very small
remnant, we should have been as Sodom, and we
should have been like unto Gomorrah. (Isaiah 1:9)

PRECEPT SEVEN

For though thy people Israel be as the sand of the sea,
yet a remnant of them shall return: the consumption
decreed shall overflow with righteousness.
(Isaiah 10:22)

Esaias also crieth concerning Israel, Though the
number of the children of Israel be as the sand of the
sea, a remnant shall be saved: (Romans 9:27)

Even though we can know that some of this remnant is aware they
are the remnant, we can know that they believe in the God that raised
me from the dead, not in this false god that supposedly changed our
perfect Father.

Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of
the world, but was manifest in these last times for you,
Who by him do believe in God, that raised him up
from the dead, and gave him glory; that your faith and
hope might be in God. Seeing ye have purified your
souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto
unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one
another with a pure heart fervently: (1 Peter 1:20-22)

I was the first to be raised from the dead as shown in the fifth
book, At midnight I will rise. I am not sure if this remnant will be
the dead in Christ that will rise, but I do know that they will be rising
before the end of the world. As shown in several, if not all of the
previous books, it is time to turn back to our Father so that He can
begin to heal you. Now we are going to look at several areas in which
our Father tells us to turn back to Him. Because this is the only way
you will get back to the light.

Therefore say thou unto them, Thus saith the Lord
of hosts; Turn ye unto me, saith the Lord of hosts,

and I will turn unto you, saith the Lord of hosts.
(Zecharia 1:3)

But if from thence thou shalt seek the Lord thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul. When thou art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the Lord thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice;(For the Lord thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he sware unto them. (Deuteronomy 4:29-31)

If my people, which are called by my name, shall humble themselves, and pray, and seek my face, and turn from their wicked ways; then will I hear from heaven, and will forgive their sin, and will heal their land. (2 Chronicles 7:14)

Therefore is the anger of the Lord kindled against his people, and he hath stretched forth his hand against them, and hath smitten them: and the hills did tremble, and their carcasses were torn in the midst of the streets. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 5:25)

Without me they shall bow down under the prisoners, and they shall fall under the slain. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah10:4)

Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for every one is an hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaketh folly. For all this his anger

PRECEPT SEVEN

is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still.
(Isaiah9:17)

Go and proclaim these words toward the north, and say, Return, thou backsliding Israel, saith the Lord; and I will not cause mine anger to fall upon you: for I am merciful, saith the Lord, and I will not keep anger for ever. Only acknowledge thine iniquity, that thou hast transgressed against the Lord thy God, and hast scattered thy ways to the strangers under every green tree, and ye have not obeyed my voice, saith the Lord. Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion: And I will give you pastors according to mine heart, which shall feed you with knowledge and understanding.
(Jeremiah 3:12-15)

Come, and let us return unto the Lord: for he hath torn, and he will heal us; he hath smitten, and he will bind us up. After two days will he revive us: in the third day he will raise us up, and we shall live in his sight. Then shall we know, if we follow on to know the Lord: his going forth is prepared as the morning; and he shall come unto us as the rain, as the latter and former rain unto the earth. (Hosea 6:1-3)

We are showing this last one in Hosea because it reminds me of something that we showed you all in the previous books. Notice how it states that he shall come to us as the rain? This is referring to the doctrine of God the Father.

My doctrine shall drop as the rain, my speech shall distil as the dew, as the small rain upon the

tender herb, and as the showers upon the grass:
(Deuteronomy 32:2)

This doctrine does not come down as the rain if you do not turn back to Him and start hearkening to His voice. That is the only way to get back to the light. Then and only then will you be able to let your candle shine.

Ye are the light of the world. A city that is set on an hill cannot be hid. Neither do men light a candle, and put it under a bushel, but on a candlestick; and it giveth light unto all that are in the house. Let your light so shine before men, that they may see your good works, and glorify your Father which is in heaven.
(Matthew 5:14-17)

Once you start learning from the Father, your works will no longer be dead. Nor will you be the walking dead. He will teach you how to love the same way that He loves. And He is the only one that can teach you. This does not matter who you are, if you are still alive in the physical form, you can still turn back to this light.

Being Born Again

This is going to be another short chapter and yes, it will probably upset, or offend many. I have heard so many people claim that they are a born-again Christians, but nothing in their lives changed. This is something that I take personal also. It irritates me to hear people say this because I have been born again. Spiritually, physically, and mentally. This is not something that you can just go to some man-made church, be baptized in water, and walk out thinking that you have just been born again.

It has been so long since I have been in a man-made church, but I think people think this is them being born again. It has something to do with being dunked in water. We all were in water while we were in our physical mom's womb. Speaking from experience, I know the baptism of water is to show the Father that you are willing to start living for Him and not the ways of the world. I mean after all; we are living in Satan's world.

In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. (2 Corinthians 4:4)

Maybe what I am getting ready to say is because of how many times I have listened to the Bible. And because I have no doubt that we are living in Satan's kingdom. But there is another section of the Bible that tells that this is Satan' kingdom.

And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your children cast them out? therefore they shall be your judges. But if I cast out devils by the Spirit of God, then the kingdom of God is come unto you. Or else how can one enter into a strong man's house, and spoil his goods, except he first bind the strong man? and then he will spoil his house. He that is not with me is against me; and he that gathereth not with me scattereth abroad. (Matthew 12:25-30)

Yes, being baptized with water is required but it must be of your own choice also. If I recall correctly, I was baptized as a little child, according to my parents of the flesh. I didn't and do not remember this, so after the Father called me to the Bible when I was forty-one, my conscience told me that I needed to be baptized as an adult. Then shortly after being baptized with water, our Father kicked me out of the man-made church.

Sidenote here, when one gets baptized with water, this is the spirit of Elias in which told your conscience to be baptized.

For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if ye will receive it, this is Elias, which was for to come. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. (Matthew 11:13-15)

I am not going to break it down as I have in the previous books here, but yes, when you feel you are to get baptized with water, this is the spirit of Elias. And then this reminds me of how many are called, but few are chosen.

For many are called, but few are chosen. (Matthew 22:14)

If it were that simple, then I gave up my life for nothing. I spent five years or so trying to be obedient to all the laws of Moses, before I was commanded to start listening to the Bible. When I started to listen to the King James Version of the Bible, I heard the engrafted word in which led me out into the wilderness to die. I thought I was going out to physically die. This was after I gave everything I owned away, including my car and all monies, to the poor and needy, as explained in previous books. I slept in an untreated tent while it was raining. I awoke the next morning with my clothes soaking wet. Being out in the wilderness where nobody could see me, I took my clothes off to dry.

Now when any of us was born in the physical realm, we were born naked. We owned nothing, and we relied on our parents for everything. When this took place, I willingly made it so I owned nothing, I was naked, and I put all of my trust into our Father for everything as I started living for Him, His ways, and His word in the King James Version of the Bible. This was the beginning of my new life.

For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. (1 Timothy 6:7)

And said, Naked came I out of my mother's womb, and naked shall I return thither: the Lord gave, and the Lord hath taken away; blessed be the name of the Lord. (Job 1:21)

As he came forth of his mother's womb, naked shall he return to go as he came, and shall take nothing of his labour, which he may carry away in his hand. And this also is a sore evil, that in all points as he came, so shall he go: and what profit hath he that hath laboured for the wind? (Ecclesiastes 5:15-16)

When I walked out into the wilderness, after giving everything away, I was spiritually, physically, and mentally giving up living in

this world. When I awoke and took my clothes off, that was me leaving this world naked. I left this world in the spiritual realm, the exact same way I came into it. Skipping a lot of details, I walked back to civilization after about forty hours, thinking that I screwed up because I did not physically die. This was me starting a new life. This was me being born into the Father's world. Or better yet, this was the beginning of me entering into the kingdom of God.

Jesus answered and said unto him, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot see the kingdom of God. Nicodemus saith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the second time into his mother's womb, and be born? Jesus answered, Verily, verily, I say unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God. That which is born of the flesh is flesh; and that which is born of the Spirit is spirit. Marvel not that I said unto thee, Ye must be born again. (John 3:3-7)

When I give you all the description of me being born again, this is also the baptism of the Holy Ghost in which is different than the baptism of water. Even though our Father called me to the Bible in 2011, it was not until after I did this, that I started to learn who I am. It was not until I did this that I started my one-on-one, hardcore, hands-on training with our Father. It was not until after I did this that I started to understand that everybody that has been on, or will be on this planet, makes up the one Son of God. Regardless of color, race, nationalism, size, or shape. Everyone is a servant and or vessel of God.

If we are not truly born again, there is no way we can see any of what I just described, and much more. So, now we need to listen what needs to happen when we are born again.

Who by him do believe in God, that raised him up from the dead, and gave him glory; that your faith and hope might be in God. Seeing ye have purified

PRECEPT SEVEN

your souls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, see that ye love one another with a pure heart fervently: Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.
(1 Peter 1:21)

You will never be born again if you truly do not believe that our Father is perfect, righteous, and justified in all that He has done, doing, and will do. The same goes if you do not truly believe He is perfect, righteous, and justified in all that He has said, saying, or will say. That was the belief I had the very first time I read the Bible in 2011. Because if you do not believe this, you will not give up anything in this world.

I am not going to try and tell you all that you will do exactly as I did, because I doubt anyone would have that kind of will. I mean, I gave away literally everything I owned except one pair of pants, one pair of undershorts, one pair of socks, two shirts because I always wore an undershirt, and one sweat jacket. I gave it all away to the poor and needy.

Maybe it is because of how personal I take it when people say they are born again, but this reminds me of the scriptures that talk about just this.

And, behold, one came and said unto him, Good Master, what good thing shall I do, that I may have eternal life? And he said unto him, Why callest thou me good? there is none good but one, that is, God: but if thou wilt enter into life, keep the commandments. He saith unto him, Which? Jesus said, Thou shalt do no murder, Thou shalt not commit adultery, Thou shalt not steal, Thou shalt not bear false witness, Honour thy father and thy mother: and, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. The young man saith unto him, All these things have I kept from my youth

up: what lack I yet? Jesus said unto him, If thou wilt be perfect, go and sell that thou hast, and give to the poor, and thou shalt have treasure in heaven: and come and follow me. But when the young man heard that saying, he went away sorrowful: for he had great possessions. (Matthew 19:16-22)

The very first time I read the Bible, I read and heard that our Father is perfect, righteous, and justified. I believed it and immediately stopped celebrating birthdays and man-made holidays. Why? Because I trusted Him and I truly felt that if He thought we needed to celebrate these days, He would have told us to do just that. I trusted Him, and still do, so I just stopped.

I honestly feel this was my first level of education with our Father. This is going to reflect back on some of what we showed in the fourth book, Jesus is here, in the chapter, Let us make man in our image. We all have been enrolled into schooling here. Just as a child has to go through different levels of school in the flesh, we must go through schooling, but with the Father.

O foolish Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye should not obey the truth, before whose eyes Jesus Christ hath been evidently set forth, crucified among you? This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? Are ye so foolish? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the flesh? Have ye suffered so many things in vain? if it be yet in vain. He therefore that ministereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, doeth he it by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith? Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness. Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the same are the children of Abraham. And the scripture, foreseeing that God would justify

the heathen through faith, preached before the gospel unto Abraham, saying, In thee shall all nations be blessed. So then they which be of faith are blessed with faithful Abraham. For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curse: for it is written, Cursed is every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them. But that no man is justified by the law in the sight of God, it is evident: for, The just shall live by faith. And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them shall live in them. Christ hath redeemed us from the curse of the law, being made a curse for us: for it is written, Cursed is every one that hangeth on a tree: That the blessing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jesus Christ; that we might receive the promise of the Spirit through faith. Brethren, I speak after the manner of men; Though it be but a man's covenant, yet if it be confirmed, no man disannulleth, or addeth thereto. Now to Abraham and his seed were the promises made. He saith not, And to seeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy seed, which is Christ. And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect. For if the inheritance be of the law, it is no more of promise: but God gave it to Abraham by promise. Wherefore then serveth the law? It was added because of transgressions, till the seed should come to whom the promise was made; and it was ordained by angels in the hand of a mediator. Now a mediator is not a mediator of one, but God is one. Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid: for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law. But the scripture hath concluded all

under sin, that the promise by faith of Jesus Christ might be given to them that believe. But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. Wherefore the law was our schoolmaster to bring us unto Christ, that we might be justified by faith. But after that faith is come, we are no longer under a schoolmaster. But before faith came, we were kept under the law, shut up unto the faith which should afterwards be revealed. (Galatians 3:1-25)

I do not see how anyone can think that they can just automatically graduate with a college degree when they haven't enrolled into kindergarten. Metaphorically speaking. To be born again, you need to be born to the incorruptible seed, to the word of God. You will have to start learning of our perfect Father and His ways. At bear minimum, I also believe you will have to give up the celebration of all birthdays and all man-made holidays. And most definitely, have to start listening to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

By celebrating any birthday or man-made holiday, you are observing days and time. Let us listen to where the scriptures talk against this.

Now I say, That the heir, as long as he is a child, differeth nothing from a servant, though he be lord of all; But is under tutors and governors until the time appointed of the father. Even so we, when we were children, were in bondage under the elements of the world: But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. And because ye are sons, God hath sent forth the Spirit of his Son into your hearts, crying, Abba, Father. Wherefore thou art no more a servant, but a son;

and if a son, then an heir of God through Christ. Howbeit then, when ye knew not God, ye did service unto them which by nature are no gods. But now, after that ye have known God, or rather are known of God, how turn ye again to the weak and beggarly elements, whereunto ye desire again to be in bondage? Ye observe days, and months, and times, and years. I am afraid of you, lest I have bestowed upon you labour in vain. (Galatians 4:1-11)

As you can see and hear Paul say, he is afraid of those that observe days, months, and times, and years. Is not celebrating birthdays and all man-made holidays a way of observing days, months, times, and years? By celebrating these days in which our Father never commanded, you will continue to be in bondage and not free.

There is more to this also. People must be willing to give up on material things. As we showed when I was reborn, I left Satan's kingdom with nothing. And then I entered into the Kingdom of God with nothing. And to this day, I am more than happy with nothing but food and raiment. Well, I guess I have a phone that I need for my job. I do have a TV now. And I have some exercise equipment that I carry in the truck. I have this to keep myself physically active so that I do not allow myself to put the sixty pounds back on that I told you all about in the last two books. I also do have a 96 Harley Davidson that I paid for in full when I had the incident in May of 2022. I bought it to commute to and from work the four months I was out of the truck getting myself recertified. But I did have Cathy's name put on it also so that she could sell it if she needed to when I left. It is in her storage unit, and I haven't touched it since I went back on the road. So, in my mind, I no longer have it because I live in my truck and do not take time off.

To be born again, you must put on the incorruptible in place of the corruptible. And nobody is going to do this on the spot.

Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever. (1 Peter 1:23)

It will be a process that you will have to endure. Then listen to how many will have to overcome the feeling of money is the answer to everything.

But godliness with contentment is great gain. For we brought nothing into this world, and it is certain we can carry nothing out. And having food and raiment let us be therewith content. But they that will be rich fall into temptation and a snare, and into many foolish and hurtful lusts, which drown men in destruction and perdition. For the love of money is the root of all evil: which while some coveted after, they have erred from the faith, and pierced themselves through with many sorrows. (1 Timothy 6:6-10)

As you have just seen and heard, the love of money is the root of all evil. This means you are going to have to come to the realization that money is no more than a tool of survival. The more money a person tends to have, they tend to want more material things. No material things are going with you when you leave, nor any money, not even the clothes on your back, so be happy with bare necessities.

We are to be caring more for the belonging of others than our own belongings.

Let nothing be done through strife or vainglory; but in lowliness of mind let each esteem other better than themselves. Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others. (Philippians 2:3-4)

PRECEPT SEVEN

Now I am going to make a confession to the world. My friends of the flesh know this, but now I am going to share it with the world. I hate having a bunch of money. It scares me. There have been a few times that I have gotten a few checks without our Father having me find someone in need. Or them being led to me. I do not give money to any charity organization that advertises. When I help others out, I want to make sure that they get every penny that I give them. If they are advertising, there is a good portion of the money that I am giving that is going for that advertising. And I am not here to help anyone get rich.

He that oppresseth the poor to increase his riches, and
he that giveth to the rich, shall surely come to want.
(Proverbs 22:16)

So, here is my confession. There has been times in which I get a few thousand in my possession, so I go to a casino and intentionally lose a couple thousand. I usually will not keep a lot of money because I do not want to be tempted to buy things that I do not need.

There hath no temptation taken you but such as is
common to man: but God is faithful, who will not
suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but
will with the temptation also make a way to escape,
that ye may be able to bear it. (1 Corinthians 10:13)

I realize that this does seem like you might have to give up a lot, but I assure you, there reward of just being set free of all the hassle that comes with having all these material things is more than worth it. Then the rewards that we receive in the next world or overwhelming.

And Jesus answered and said, Verily I say unto you,
There is no man that hath left house, or brethren,
or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children,
or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's, But he shall

receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last first. (Mark 10:29-31)

Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it. (Matthew 13:44-46)

Now we need to reflect on something that was shown in previous books. We are the vessels of God. We have shown that vessels are also bottles. We have shown how we are made up of over sixty percent water. Let us do a quick google search so that we can see this.

Our bodies are composed of water. The entire human body is about 66 percent water. Our bones are composed of 22 percent water, muscles are 76 percent and blood is 83 percent. Lungs are 90 percent, and our brains are actually 95 percent water. Hydration - June 2020 - Maine.gov <https://www.maine.gov> › mdt › challengeme › topics Hydration - June 2020 - Maine.gov

Notice how the brain is made up of 95% water. Now we have shown that water, milk, honey, wine, bread, meat, and even my flesh, are all levels of knowledge. To be born again, we must get rid of the old so that we can put in the new.

PRECEPT SEVEN

No man putteth a piece of new cloth unto an old garment, for that which is put in to fill it up taketh from the garment, and the rent is made worse. Neither do men put new wine into old bottles: else the bottles break, and the wine runneth out, and the bottles perish: but they put new wine into new bottles, and both are preserved. (Matthew 9:16-17)

For I am full of matter, the spirit within me constraineth me. Behold, my belly is as wine which hath no vent; it is ready to burst like new bottles. (Job 32:18-19)

When we get rid of the old and put in the new is when you will be born again, but you must get rid of the old. This is when people start listening to our Father and all that He has said. Now I want you to think about how we just went over how much of the human body is water. Then I want you to think about when we are told that Jesus turns water into wine.

And the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee; and the mother of Jesus was there: And both Jesus was called, and his disciples, to the marriage. And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jesus saith unto him, They have no wine. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come. His mother saith unto the servants, Whatsoever he saith unto you, do it. And there were set there six waterpots of stone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece. Jesus saith unto them, Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them up to the brim. And he saith unto them, Draw out now, and bear unto the governor of the feast. And they bare it. When the ruler of the feast had tasted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was: (but the servants which drew the water

knew;) the governor of the feast called the bridegroom, And saith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine until now. (John 2:1-10)

I have talked about this in previous books, but this time I am going to give you a example of how this works. At first glance, this sounds like physical water being turned into physical wine. But remember we are to worship God is Spirit because He is Spirit.

Notice how the ruler of the feast tasted the wine, he stated every man at the beginning doth set forth good wine, and when men have well drunk, then that which is worse: but thou hast kept the good wine until now?

Picture a child when this child is born, they do nothing wrong. As they grow, they learn to do things by the way of man, and not the ways of God. Then as they get older, they get stuck in there ways. Now listen to this.

And when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place. And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting. And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them. And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance. And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven. Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language. And they were all amazed and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak Galilaeans? And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born?

Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judaea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia, Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and proselytes, Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God. And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one to another, What meaneth this? Others mocking said, These men are full of new wine. But Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice, and said unto them, Ye men of Judaea, and all ye that dwell at Jerusalem, be this known unto you, and hearken to my words: For these are not drunken, as ye suppose, seeing it is but the third hour of the day. (Acts 2:1-15)

These people are drunk with the Holy Ghost. Remember how we are made up of all that water. That is the water that gets turned into wine. I bring this up because just yesterday, I experienced this again. And I have been experiencing this for years now, but I feel the Father is telling me to share this with you all. I am sure that is because when the time comes that many will be born again, similar things will be happening.

I was at a shipper, waiting for the trailer I was picking up to be done. I was sitting in the bunk of my truck, writing in this book. Obviously, my mind is very much in depth with the scriptures. The guard came to my truck and handed me a piece of paper with some numbers on it. He told me to go to door 101 to hook my trailer, then go to door 110 to get my bills. I looked at the paper and saw the door that my trailer was in, then I saw another number thinking that this must be the trailer number. I go to the trailer in door 101, but it is not the number on my paper. There was an employee out checking on the other trailers, so I brought this to his attention. He just tells me to go to door 110, and talk to them about it.

I parked my truck in front of this trailer, and proceeded to walk into door 110 to talk to the personnel in the shipping office. I handed

her the piece of paper, and told her that this is not the trailer in door 101. She looks at it and tells me that this is your truck number, not your trailer number. I looked at it and just busted out laughing. She too, started to laugh because she was right. I didn't even recognize my own truck number. Then I told her that I was sorry and that my mind was elsewhere. Anyway, I went ahead and signed the papers that I needed, and walked back out to my truck. As I was walking, it just came out of my mouth, talk about being drunk with the Holy Ghost. So, do not let things like this scare you because when you allow it to happen, it is the best feeling in the world. And it is fun if you want to be.

And I do believe that there will be many that will be born again just by reading these books that are Father had me write. Because at no time do I even suggest the slightest hint of imperfection with our Father, you will start to believe that He is perfect. It has to start somewhere. And then once the Father sees that you are trying, He will do the rest because He is the true savior, and I am just an example.

Ye are my witnesses, saith the Lord, and my servant whom I have chosen: that ye may know and believe me, and understand that I am he: before me there was no God formed, neither shall there be after me. I, even I, am the Lord; and beside me there is no saviour. (Isaiah 43:10-11)

For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: (1 Peter 2:21)

But you are going to have to do this with a willing heart.

And this leads us right into the next chapter. Which is a chapter that was in the last book, but I feel that our Father is telling me that I need to put it into this book with a few modifications to it.

Following Jesus

This chapter is a chapter that was done in the last book. I felt the Father is telling me that this needs to be here, so here it is. The only difference is I changed the name from Obeying Jesus to Following Jesus. But this time as you read through it, think of how the holy men that wrote the scripture did not write by their own will. They did not write of what they saw, they didn't write of what they read somewhere else, they wrote what they were being told to write by our Father through the Holy Ghost. And try not to think of this as history, but rather think of what you read being said to you, personally.

This chapter might be out of place, but I am feeling our Father is telling me that I need to do a chapter on this topic. There are many that think that Jesus changed our perfect Father. Many think that if they get baptized by water, their automatically saved. There are many that think that Jesus came here a couple thousand years ago, died for our sins, even all future sins, and that their sins are automatically forgiven. There are many that we are living in the new covenant now. All of this is far from the truth. And we are going to be showing how the words of Jesus, tell us that we need all the Bible and not just the New Testament, or just bits and pieces of it. It is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives today. You must stop thinking of the Bible as a book on history. And start realizing that it is about our lives today. Remember that all knowing Father, has the knowledge to know where you will be and what you will be doing in a year, five years, ten years, twenty years, etc. You do not know with all certainty.

The first thing we need to be listening to is how we are told that Jesus does not come here to destroy the law but to fulfill.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. (Matthew 5:17-18)

How can anyone understand how Jesus comes to fulfill the law if they have no interest in finding out what the law is about? One of the first things that I learned when this journey started for me back in 2011, was that the law can set you free. Let me elaborate. When we listen to everything of the Bible and not just bits and pieces, we can learn that the truth is thy law.

Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth. (Psalm 119:142)

Yes, thy law is the truth, so in retrospect, what we hear when we listen to the words of Jesus tell us that the truth shall set you free, is that the law shall set you free.

If you listen to the ways of man,, they will tell you that Jesus came here, died for your sins, and if you believe that, your free. No, you're not, nor will you be. You will continue in this life until the end of the world, you will be judged for all of your sins, and you will continue to be reincarnated and have to worry about dyeing in each life that you live. Remember there is another world coming after this one. You will not be released from prison, or your sentence of death as explained in the last book. At Midnight I Will Rise.

And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come. (Matthew 12:32)

PRECEPT SEVEN

We need to remember that the law is a shadow of things to come. If you aren't willing to take part in the law in any fashion now, you most definitely will not in the world to come.

For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. (Hebrews 10:1)

As you can and will come to understand in the previous books, we are the beast in which they above that have dominion over, that they sacrifice. But it is not a physical sacrifice, it is spiritual in which will cause havoc in your own personal life.

As for it being a shadow of things to come, we need to realize that those that become one with the Father, will have dominion over those that do not become one. That is the world to come. But only if you are willing to obey our Father. Trust Him for He knows what He is doing.

It is the law in which teaches us how to love others as we love ourselves. Now I am going to show something that is not said by the words of Jesus in this section, but he states it also.

Love worketh no ill to his neighbour: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law. (Romans 13:10)

And after listening to the law so many times, I can honestly say that I never knew how to truly love everybody, as I do now. This love for others does not come at convenient times. It is all the time, and it is for anyone you see. The law teaches you how to put yourself into someone else's shoes, but from a spiritual perspective. And teaches you to consider how you would feel if you were that person and in their situation yourself. Then you treat them accordingly.

So now that we have shown that, I want to show where we can here that the truth can set you free.

Then said Jesus to those Jews which believed on him, If ye continue in my word, then are ye my disciples indeed; And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. They answered him, We be Abraham's seed, and were never in bondage to any man: how sayest thou, Ye shall be made free? Jesus answered them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Whosoever committeth sin is the servant of sin. And the servant abideth not in the house for ever: but the Son abideth ever. If the Son therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed. (John 8:31-36)

Notice how we are being told if you continue in my words. This is so taken for granted that it almost makes me sick to my stomach. I see billboards all over the country telling people that Jesus sets you free. No, he don't, if you do not know him. I showed you all in the first chapter, that we get to know Jesus if we search for him in the scriptures.

Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me. And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life. (John 5:39-40)

This is the words of Jesus telling you specifically to search the scriptures. This is the only time that the words of Jesus tell us to search the scriptures. The scriptures that he is referring to is what allows us to find him in the Old Testament. This is what was what we started to show in the second book. Behold, A Greater Than Jonas Is Here. This starts to show how everybody is part of the one Son of God. Regardless of color, race, nationalism, size, or shape. Regardless of what they have done, doing, or will do. The scriptures teach that every person has their own set of rules, laws, judgments, testimonies, ordinances, and commandments. We start to learn that this is how the world functions. That is what I meant in the first chapter, if you

do not believe this, then you do not believe in and or understand the name of Jesus Christ. This is when we need to be reminded that we are to hear the engrafted word.

Wherefore lay apart all filthiness and superfluity of naughtiness, and receive with meekness the engrafted word, which is able to save your souls. (James 1:21)

Have you ever heard of subliminal messages? That is what this engrafted word is. We are getting ready to learn that the words of Jesus constantly tell us to refer to Moses, the law, and the prophets. He does not directly say that we need to listen to all of Moses, the law, or the prophets, but he is constantly referring to them and shows that he knows what they are all about. The first time that we can hear this in in the fourth book of the New Testament.

Then was Jesus led up of the Spirit into the wilderness to be tempted of the devil. And when he had fasted forty days and forty nights, he was afterward an hungred. And when the tempter came to him, he said, If thou be the Son of God, command that these stones be made bread. But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Then the devil taketh him up into the holy city, and setteth him on a pinnacle of the temple, And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things

will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me.
Then saith Jesus unto him, Get thee hence, Satan: for
it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God,
and him only shalt thou serve. (Matthew 4:1-10)

We can hear Jesus refer to the scriptures three different times here. He does this by saying it is written. This is the fourth book of the New Testament, so what scriptures could he be talking about. Let us look at what he is referring to each time he is tempted by Satan. Yes, In the third and fourth books, I show you all how this happened to me also. But they did not happen in the order that it happens in the bible. We are going to go through each time that Jesus was tempted, show where it is written, and then I will show you how those same things happened to me when I was on my 40 days fast back in 2016. If you're interested in learning more about my experience back then, I suggest that you read the fourth book. Jesus is here. I put the third book inside of the fourth, and there is a lot more detail in that one.

The first time he is tempted shown here, we can hear him say that man shall not live on bread alone. Let us listen to where this is written in the scriptures.

And he humbled thee, and suffered thee to hunger,
and fed thee with manna, which thou knewest not,
neither did thy fathers know; that he might make
thee know that man doth not live by bread only, but
by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of the
Lord doth man live. (Deuteronomy 8:3)

This happened to me on my last week that I was working for my brother in South Dakota. My brother and his wife went to a man-built church. They come back trying to tell me that a version of the bible other than the King James Version of the Bible states that Jesus made all food clean. We argued back and forth all day long. I wound up telling them that you cannot change what the Bible.

Then we can hear Jesus say thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Ye shall not tempt the Lord your God, as ye tempted him in Massah. (Deuteronomy 6:16)

This happened to me about two weeks after I went out in the wilderness to die. I was at my mom's in Macon, MO. The brother that is just a couple years older than me, told me, that he wanted me to check into a hospital, be put on meds and see if I still wanted to learn about God the way that I did and do. He could not understand how I could sit all day long and listen to the Bible. I told him the same words. I told him that thou shall not temp God. You see, my brother was looking for proof so he could believe what was happening to me. I didn't and don't need proof. I know what is happening within me. I am a little more use to it now, but back then I was so excited and eager to learn. Today, it is just normal for me to listen to the scriptures as I am driving.

Then the last thing we can hear Jesus say is that man shalt worship the Lord thy God and Him only. I am a little shady on this one, but I am almost certain that this too, happened in Macon with the brother that is only a couple years older than me. I remember once I got in the truck and the Father started showing me all of this, I remember thinking that they did not happen in the order that they happened in the scriptures. When I said thou shall not tempt God, that was before the fast started. I mean yes, I helped my mom out in Macon, but There was never an agreement of me saying that she could not pay me like there was when the Father sent me to South Dakota. For more details on this, I suggest reading the fourth book. I would say the third and fourth, but as explained in the fourth book, I put the third inside the fourth with a few modifications. But I assure you, I did tell my brother that thou shall worship God and Him only. The scriptures cannot be broken.

These are also described in the book of Luke. But in Luke, they are listed in a different sequence. Kind of like they didn't happen in sequence with me, but they all happened. Now I want to look at a few spots that we can hear people ask Jesus of certain things. Or we can hear Jesus say, it is written.

And, behold, a certain lawyer stood up, and tempted him, saying, Master, what shall I do to inherit eternal life? He said unto him, What is written in the law? how readest thou? (Luke 10:25-26)

And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves. (Matthew 21:13)

Then saith Jesus unto them, All ye shall be offended because of me this night: for it is written, I will smite the shepherd, and the sheep of the flock shall be scattered abroad. (Matthew 26:31)

Saying unto them, It is written, My house is the house of prayer: but ye have made it a den of thieves. (Luke 19:46)

But this cometh to pass, that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause. (John 15:25)

And he said unto them, These are the words which I spake unto you, while I was yet with you, that all things must be fulfilled, which were written in the law of Moses, and in the prophets, and in the psalms, concerning me. (Luke 24:44)

Now we have shown a few times in which we can hear that it is written. What do you think you are being encouraged to do here? No, he do not come out and say that you need to go find where in the scriptures this is written, nor does he tell you where it is written specifically. But he does tell you that it is written. So, without saying it directly, he is telling you to search this out in the scriptures. This last one that we showed, tells us which is written in the law of Moses,

and in the prophets, and the psalms. This one is telling you that you need to search and seek all the Old Testament. This is not saying, well I said it, so just believe that it is in the Old Testament.

Now I am going to show one verse stated by the words of Jesus. But I have some commentary I want to make on this for it directs us in a different direction and has something to do with the ten commandments.

Jesus answered them, Is it not written in your law, I said, Ye are gods? If he called them gods, unto whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken; Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God? (John 10:34-36)

We showed you all in the last chapter that God Himself, dwells in everybody, so yes, this makes us gods. This does not make us the Father; however He does dwell within each of us. This is how others can be your god. If you allow someone to keep you from seeking our Father within the scriptures, you are spiritually putting this person or persons in front of God. Which is breaking the very first commandment.

And God spake all these words, saying, I am the Lord thy God, which have brought thee out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. Thou shalt have no other gods before me. (Exodus 20:1-3)

As explained in the last book, *At Midnight I Will Rise*, we all have several gods. The commandment is not to have any other gods before me. Anything you put your trust into can be a god. Now I want to start looking at the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord

thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36-40)

How can one love God with all of their heart, soul, and mind if they are not willing to try to understand who He is and what He is all about? So, yes Jesus is telling you to seek the Father. And as we have shown you all, the law is what teaches us to love our neighbor as ourselves. Then Jesus tell us that on these two commandments, hang all of the law. How are you going to hang all the law and prophets on these two commandments if you don't want anything to do with the law and the prophets?

Now we are going to show another area in which we can hear about these two commandments. But this time we are going to listen to what is said right before Jesus states these and then listen to how the scribe replied back to Jesus and then notice what Jesus tells him.

And one of the scribes came, and having heard them reasoning together, and perceiving that he had answered them well, asked him, Which is the first commandment of all? And Jesus answered him, The first of all the commandments is, Hear, O Israel; The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these. And the scribe said unto him, Well, Master, thou hast said the truth: for there is one God; and there is none other but he: And to love him with all the heart, and with all the understanding, and with all the soul,

PRECEPT SEVEN

and with all the strength, and to love his neighbour as himself, is more than all whole burnt offerings and sacrifices. And when Jesus saw that he answered discreetly, he said unto him, Thou art not far from the kingdom of God. And no man after that durst ask him any question. (Mark 12:28-34)

This time we can hear Jesus say, hear O Israel The Lord our God is one Lord. Then he goes to tell two commandments. Then we can hear how the scribe replied, he stated that he was aware that there is but one God. then he goes on to say to love Him with all the heart and with all the understanding, with all the soul, and with all the strength. We are being told right here that we need an understanding of our Father. How can anyone get an understanding of our Father if they refuse to seek Him? Then we can hear Jesus state that this scribe is not far from the kingdom of God. Without saying it directly, Jesus is telling us that we at least need to have the same understanding as this scribe to be close to the kingdom of God.

Now that we have shown this, we need to listen to when we can hear Jesus say this is the law and prophets.

Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Matthew 7:12)

This is the same thing; Jesus is telling us that we need to seek out the law and prophets so that we can learn how to do unto others and we would have others do unto us. Now I want to focus on a few times we can hear Jesus say things like for those that have the ears to hear.

For all the prophets and the law prophesied until John. And if ye will receive it, this is Elias, which was for to come. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear. (Matthew 11:13-15)

The same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side. And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore. And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold, a sower went forth to sow; And when he sowed, some seeds fell by the way side, and the fowls came and devoured them up: Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth: And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away. And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them: But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. (Matthew 13:1-9)

Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the

kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. (Matthew 13:36-43)

We are going to pause here and give some commentary on what we just heard in these first three. How can anyone find out who Elias is if they do not seek him out in the scriptures? Yes, he has already come for all of you that think you will see him before the end. I describe this in previous books, if you want to learn how the scriptures teach us how he has come already.

Then we hear Jesus give the parable about the Sower. And he speaks this in a parable so that those that do not want anything to do with our perfect Father and His perfect ways, will never understand how to plant this seed. Well, the last book, *At Midnight I Will Rise* gives some details as to how we plant these seeds. But then later in the chapter, he breaks down the parable for the disciples. But in both instances, he states who have ears to hear, let him hear.

Even after breaking the parable down, why would he say who have ears to hear, let him hear? There is going to be a chapter devoted to just this later in the book, but right now listen to how he states this is about the end of the world. And the devil is the one that has sowed them. But then listen to how he states that all those that do wicked and iniquity will first be gathered and cast into the furnace of fire. For all of those that think they are going to be raptured and taken first, you now can hear where you are going. Straight to the furnace of fire so that the righteous will shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of our Father.

Now I want to focus on another time Jesus says if any man have ears to hear, let him hear. But this time we are going to show this in a different subject mater that will require me to explain a few things.

Then came together unto him the Pharisees, and certain of the scribes, which came from Jerusalem. And when they saw some of his disciples eat bread with defiled, that is to say, with unwashen, hands, they found fault. For the Pharisees, and all the Jews,

except they wash their hands oft, eat not, holding the tradition of the elders. And when they come from the market, except they wash, they eat not. And many other things there be, which they have received to hold, as the washing of cups, and pots, brasen vessels, and of tables. Then the Pharisees and scribes asked him, Why walk not thy disciples according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashen hands? He answered and said unto them, Well hath Esaias prophesied of you hypocrites, as it is written, This people honoureth me with their lips, but their heart is far from me. Howbeit in vain do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. For laying aside the commandment of God, ye hold the tradition of men, as the washing of pots and cups: and many other such like things ye do. And he said unto them, Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition. For Moses said, Honour thy father and thy mother; and, Whoso curseth father or mother, let him die the death: But ye say, If a man shall say to his father or mother, It is Corban, that is to say, a gift, by whatsoever thou mightest be profited by me; he shall be free. And ye suffer him no more to do ought for his father or his mother; Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition, which ye have delivered: and many such like things do ye. And when he had called all the people unto him, he said unto them, Hearken unto me every one of you, and understand: There is nothing from without a man, that entering into him can defile him: but the things which come out of him, those are they that defile the man. If any man have ears to hear, let him hear. (Mark 7:1-16)

The first thing we need to explain is that this is not about food at all. This is targeted at how people do many things that make the word of God void. But because I know there is a lot of people that believe that this is about food, I am going to put that to an end. Back when I was on my 40 days of fasting at my brothers, they went to a man-made church and when they came back, they verbally attacked me telling me that we could eat unclean things. This argument went on for several hours. After neither side would come to a conclusion, I went for a long walk to talk with the Father. When I go back from my walk, things had calmed down. As I awoke the next morning, the words that came out of my mouth were, “I never declared the unclean things as food. I immediately had to look at this and now I am going to show you all the same thing.

I am going to show you the first seven verses of Leviticus 11. Then I will make some commentary on that before showing you something in the fifth book of Moses.

And the Lord spake unto Moses and to Aaron, saying unto them, Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, These are the beasts which ye shall eat among all the beasts that are on the earth. Whatsoever parteth the hoof, and is clovenfooted, and cheweth the cud, among the beasts, that shall ye eat. Nevertheless these shall ye not eat of them that chew the cud, or of them that divide the hoof: as the camel, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the coney, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the hare, because he cheweth the cud, but divideth not the hoof; he is unclean unto you. And the swine, though he divide the hoof, and be clovenfooted, yet he cheweth not the cud; he is unclean to you. (Leviticus 11:1-7)

In the second verse, our Father tells us these are the beasts which ye shall eat. Then in the fourth verse, He tells us these ye shall not eat. Right there it is, He did not declare the unclean thing to be meat for us. He definitively tells us not to eat the unclean. Now I am going to show one more section, but this time, listen to how He words it.

Ye are the children of the Lord your God: ye shall not cut yourselves, nor make any baldness between your eyes for the dead. For thou art an holy people unto the Lord thy God, and the Lord hath chosen thee to be a peculiar people unto himself, above all the nations that are upon the earth. Thou shalt not eat any abominable thing. These are the beasts which ye shall eat: the ox, the sheep, and the goat, The hart, and the roebuck, and the fallow deer, and the wild goat, and the pygarg, and the wild ox, and the chamois. And every beast that parteth the hoof, and cleaveth the cleft into two claws, and cheweth the cud among the beasts, that ye shall eat. Nevertheless these ye shall not eat of them that chew the cud, or of them that divide the cloven hoof; as the camel, and the hare, and the coney: for they chew the cud, but divide not the hoof; therefore they are unclean unto you. And the swine, because it divideth the hoof, yet cheweth not the cud, it is unclean unto you: ye shall not eat of their flesh, nor touch their dead carcase. (Deuteronomy 14:1-8)

Can you hear how He says that you are a holy people unto the Lord they God? Then He goes on to explain what we shall and shall not eat. How can you be a holy people if you refuse to listen to what the Holy One commands of you?

Now if you do not believe in the Old Testament, then listen to what we are told in the New Testament.

And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in them; and I will be their God, and they shall be my people. Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean thing; and I will receive you. And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. (2 Corinthians 6:16-18)

Here in the New Testament, you are being told to come out from amongst those that are touching the unclean thing, and be ye separate. And then, and only then will God the Father receive you and will be a Father unto you and we will be His sons and daughters. But if you will not stop touching the unclean things and continue to be with all those that refuse to harken to our Father, you will not become His sons and daughter, and He will not be a Father unto you.

Now let us focus on what this is about. Many people say that someone is not right with God if they do certain things. If they don't dress in a certain way. If they don't ware their hair in a fashion that is not suitable to them. Well as shown in all of the books, everybody on the planet is a servant and or vessel of God. So, let me ask you this, how do you know God that dwells within them, is not causing them to be exactly who they are.

When we hear what goes into the mouth does not defile a man is correct but that is not talking about food. It is what comes out of a man's mouth in which defiles him, for what comes out of his mouth, comes from his heart. Let me explain, I smoke cigarettes, but this does not cause me to stop looking at the cross that everyone carries that is made without hands. I drink coffee as well, but this does not cause me to stop loving God with all of my heart, soul, mind, and strength.

Now let me show you why eating of the unclean things does cause you to not love God with all of your heart, soul, and mind. First and foremost, He said you shall not eat of the unclean things. If you do,

why can't you trust Him? In the beginning of the Bible, God said if you eat of the forbidden fruit, you will be as Him and you will know good from evil. But do you truly know if the evil that someone does, is not being done by our Father now that you know that it is Him, that dwells in everyone. You do not, but if you think you do, then you are putting yourself on the same level as God the Father. You are not Him but He does dwell within you. He tell us not to judge, or condemn others. Then He ask where is His honor? How can you honor our Father if you refuse to listen to what He has said or will say? Or if you believe some false god came here in the past and changed His perfect law?

A son honoureth his father, and a servant his master: if then I be a father, where is mine honour? and if I be a master, where is my fear? saith the Lord of hosts unto you, O priests, that despise my name. And ye say, Wherein have we despised thy name? (Malachi 1:6)

Now we are going to switch gears a little bit and listen to when the words of Jesus gives us direct rules to follow.

Take heed that ye do not your alms before men, to be seen of them: otherwise ye have no reward of your Father which is in heaven. Therefore when thou doest thine alms, do not sound a trumpet before thee, as the hypocrites do in the synagogues and in the streets, that they may have glory of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But when thou doest alms, let not thy left hand know what thy right hand doeth: That thine alms may be in secret: and thy Father which seeth in secret himself shall reward thee openly. And when thou prayest, thou shalt not be as the hypocrites are: for they love to pray standing in the synagogues and in the corners of the streets, that they may be seen of men. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward.

PRECEPT SEVEN

But thou, when thou prayest, enter into thy closet, and when thou hast shut thy door, pray to thy Father which is in secret; and thy Father which seeth in secret shall reward thee openly. But when ye pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do: for they think that they shall be heard for their much speaking. Be not ye therefore like unto them: for your Father knoweth what things ye have need of, before ye ask him. After this manner therefore pray ye: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come, Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil: For thine is the kingdom, and the power, and the glory, for ever. Amen. For if ye forgive men their trespasses, your heavenly Father will also forgive you: But if ye forgive not men their trespasses, neither will your Father forgive your trespasses. Moreover when ye fast, be not, as the hypocrites, of a sad countenance: for they disfigure their faces, that they may appear unto men to fast. Verily I say unto you, They have their reward. But thou, when thou fastest, anoint thine head, and wash thy face; That thou appear not unto men to fast, but unto thy Father which is in secret: and thy Father, which seeth in secret, shall reward thee openly. Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: But lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through nor steal: For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also. (Matthew 6:1-21)

First thing he mentions is to take heed and do not your alms before men. Alms are when you help someone out. This is financially a lot of times, but it can be by just helping with food, clothing, etc. Just so you can see, we will use E-sword, and online Bible concordance to look at the definition from the Greek point of view.

G1654 ἐλεημοσύνη eleēmosunē el-eh-ay-mos-oo'-nay
From G1656; compassionateness, that is, (as exercised towards the poor) beneficence, or (concretely) a benefaction: - alms (-deeds).

Do not let men see or even hear about your alms. Remember we have shown you all that man is Satan, or that Satan is inside of each of us. So, when you allow others to see or hear of your alms, you are seeking a reward from Satan. And because of this, you will not receive a reward from our Father. But if you do your alms in secret, the Father will reward you.

Then we are told that when we pray, don't be as the hypocrites for they pray in the synagogues and in the streets so that they may be seen by men. These people are anyone that prays so that others can hear their prayer. They do this because they want to be rewarded by man and or Satan instead of being rewarded by our Father. Then we are told to go into the closet and shut the door. Now let us listen to when we can hear what the door that we are to shut is.

Set a watch, O Lord, before my mouth; keep the door
of my lips.(Psalm 141:3)

Without saying it directly, we are being told to shut our mouths when we pray. Remember the Father is sitting inside of you, so He does not need others to hear your prayer. This is where I need to comment of something that I hear a lot. I know that there are a lot of people that pray to Jesus. As shown in previous books, this is giving the glory to some other spirit other than our Father.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Tell ye, and bring them near; yea, let them take counsel together: who hath declared this from ancient time? who hath told it from that time? have not I the Lord? and there is no God else beside me; a just God and a Saviour; there is none beside me. (Isaiah 45:21)

We need to remember that our Father is a jealous God and He will not share His glory with another.

They provoked him to jealousy with strange gods, with abominations provoked they him to anger. They sacrificed unto devils, not to God; to gods whom they knew not, to new gods that came newly up, whom your fathers feared not. Of the Rock that begat thee thou art unmindful, and hast forgotten God that formed thee. And when the Lord saw it, he abhorred them, because of the provoking of his sons, and of his daughters. And he said, I will hide my face from them, I will see what their end shall be: for they are a very froward generation, children in whom is no faith. They have moved me to jealousy with that which is not God; they have provoked me to anger with their vanities: and I will move them to jealousy with those which are not a people; I will provoke them to anger with a foolish nation. (Deuteronomy 32:16-21)

The only way I can and will save anyone is by them reading these books and turning back to our Father for He is the only one that can save anyone, just as He has saved me.

Now I want to point something out, those that pray before eating. No, this is not the words of Jesus, but it is something that had caught my attention the first time I read the Bible.

When thou hast eaten and art full, then thou shalt bless the Lord thy God for the good land which he hath given thee. (Deuteronomy 8:10)

I have done my own searches on this for myself in the past. I am not saying that Father told me to do so, so I will not show it on here. But the last time I searched this out, there had been something like 55,000 documented deaths due to choking while eating. Do you really think that none of these people prayed before they ate? We are told to eat and then give thanks.

Then the words of Jesus tells us not to do thy hypocrites do for when they fast, they disfigure their face and such, so that they can be seen by others. Remember Satan is in everybody, and when we do any or all of these works to be seen by others, we are seeking a reward by man and or Satan. That is why we are told that those that do these secretly will be rewarded openly by our Father. And no, fasting is not depriving yourself of food. It is helping others and taking the burden off their shoulders for no reward. Remember, we have already been over that? This can be confirmed by listening to Isaiah 58.

Then we are told not to lay up treasures on earth where moth, rust and thieves can and will corrupt, but lay up your treasures in heaven where none of these can or will ever damage in any way. Yes, I am paraphrasing but that is how I hear it. If my treasures are up in heaven with our perfect Father, then they will remain perfect for all eternity and will be there when I get there.

Now I want to focus on a few times that the words of Jesus directly tell us that you need to learn about Moses and the prophets.

I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another shall come in his own name, him ye will receive. How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and seek not the honour that cometh from God only? Do not think that I will accuse you to the Father: there is one that accuseth you, even Moses, in whom ye trust. For had ye believed Moses,

PRECEPT SEVEN

ye would have believed me; for he wrote of me. But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words? (John 5:43-47)

Right there in the last couple of verses, Jesus is saying directly that you need to believe Moses, for he wrote of me. Remember how we showed you all how we find Jesus in the scriptures? Moses is the one that teaches that everybody has their own rules, laws, judgments, testimonies, ordinances, and commandments. When we start to listen to all that Moses teaches, we start to hear how everybody is part of the one Son of God.

Now we are going to jump back to the book of Luke. In here we will hear the words of Jesus saying that we need to hear Moses and the prophets.

And he said unto him, If they hear not Moses and the prophets, neither will they be persuaded, though one rose from the dead. (Luke 16:31)

Now I am sure that there are a few of you that are asking how can we believe Moses, and hear the prophets? This is when we need to realize that just because a person is dead, they still speaketh. Remember the entire Bible is spiritual because God is a spirit.

By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh.(Hebrews 11:4)

The first things that happened to me the first time I read the Bible was I truly felt like it was talking about my personal life. That is when I realized that the Bible is not a book of history, it is one long letter of instructions on how we are to live our lives. As I told you all earlier, that is what really got me interested in seeking the wisdom of God the Father out. And also remember what we are told.

So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. (Romans 10:17)

Now we need to go back to the book of John but in we need to advance to the sixth book.

Jesus therefore answered and said unto them, Murmur not among yourselves. No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. Not that any man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life. (John 6:43-47)

Yes, Jesus is saying that no man can come to him unless the Father with hath sent him, draw him. Yes, I am saying the same thing. But for now, let us think about this for a minute. Why would the Father draw you to me if you think the Father is mean, cruel, vindictive, or you do not want anything to do with Him? Then it goes on to say that they shall be taught of God, and all that hath heard, and learned of the Father, cometh to me. Yes you must learn of our perfect Father.

I am going to tell you all how this happens, but mainly to help you understand how the Father does some of the things He is doing. Just recently, I was bringing a load in to Stevens Point, Wisconsin from the state of Washington. As truck drivers that drive across the county, most run a 70/8 recap. That means we can only work 70 hours in 8 consecutive days. I had used about 60 hours when I stopped at a truck stop. I was thinking that I would probably take a 34-hour reset so that I could run open logs the next week. If we take a 34-hour break anytime within these 70 hours, It resets our clock and then we can drive 11 hours each day until we reach our 70 hours again. If we

do not take this break, we can only work the hours that drop off on the 8th day.

When I got to the truck stop that I intended to say at, there was no parking spaces open. So, I went on personal commute and moved to the truck stop across the street with the intentions of using my personal commute to come back the original truck stop I wanted to stay at for this break. After waking the next morning, I hit my personal commute on my electronic log and started moving back to the other truck stop. Then once my truck got up to five mile an hour, the log beeped at me telling me that I had not started my day. I immediately stopped and hit my personal commute again and then proceeded over the street. When I got parked, I noticed that my electronic log had logged me driving for something like three seconds. This in turn restarted the hours that I had already gained toward a 34-hour restart.

I knew right away, that was the Father telling me that He did not want me to take a 34-hour restart there. I thought about just sitting there a while and then going on into the customer. I was picking up my next load at the same facility on Monday, so maybe I could get it loaded earlier and then take a 34-hours restart. When I arrived at the customers on Sunday, the Father started telling me right away, that I wasn't getting my next load today. I thought no big deal because I wasn't crunched for time or anything.

I walked into the receiving office with two other drivers in front of me. The one at the window was having complications with getting the correct numbers to pick up his next load. After a few minutes, I got to the window and had the same problem, which wasn't a big concern for me because my load didn't pick up until the next day. After dropping my loaded trailer, I moved my tractor out on the dead-end street to wait until Monday to get the information on my next load. I figured why not; I may well go for a walk.

When I parked the truck, I parked in an area by myself. Shortly after getting changed into some walking clothes, another bobtail truck parked right behind me. I thought within myself, so much for being parked alone. No big deal though, I then started on my walk. I

don't know why, but soon after I started walking, I told myself that I am going to walk at least six miles today. No, I am not trying to save my life, but I am not dead or done yet so I must keep my health at an acceptable level since the incident in May of 2022. So, I exercise when the opportunity arises.

After returning back to my truck about an hour and a half later, the driver from the other truck that parked right behind me, got out and started talking to me. As I have told you all in the past, if I talk with anyone, it only takes me a couple minutes at max, before I start talking about our Father. As soon as I brought the Father up, he grabbed a phone and put a picture of this Jesus character on and asked me who I thought that was. I replied, a false man. He said that so many people believe in this man, but he is not real. I then knew he had some understanding of the truth. We wound up talking for about an hour. Yes, there were a few things that he still could not grasp, but that is why this all happened. I gave him the last book that we wrote, and gave him one of my business cards that promote the new website, "davidofpsalm89.com. Which he can download the rest of the books, if he wants to, for free. And he will be one of the dead in Christ to rise. But only if he reads the books to get an understanding of our Father. If he refuses to get an understanding as well as anyone else, he will perish. Now listen to how I do nothing on my own, and that I speak only what the Father has taught me.

Then answered Jesus and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise. (John 5:19)

For I have not spoken of myself; but the Father which sent me, he gave me a commandment, what I should say, and what I should speak. And I know that his commandment is life everlasting: whatsoever I speak therefore, even as the Father said unto me, so I speak. (John 12:49-50)

And yes, today after picking up this load, the Father told me to tell you how He did this in this book. I do nothing on my own, and I only speak of what our Father has spoken to me.

Now I know that there are a lot of people that do not believe that there is any prophets alive today. Well, as shown in previous books, a prophet can just be a teacher of God's word. But most importantly, all the books in the Old Testament bring Moses and the prophets to you. You do not have to go and seek them out. We can hear this when we listen to this.

Then came the word of the Lord unto Jeremiah, saying, Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Go and tell the men of Judah and the inhabitants of Jerusalem, Will ye not receive instruction to hearken to my words? saith the Lord. The words of Jonadab the son of Rechab, that he commanded his sons not to drink wine, are performed; for unto this day they drink none, but obey their father's commandment: notwithstanding I have spoken unto you, rising early and speaking; but ye hearkened not unto me. I have sent also unto you all my servants the prophets, rising up early and sending them, saying, Return ye now every man from his evil way, and amend your doings, and go not after other gods to serve them, and ye shall dwell in the land which I have given to you and to your fathers: but ye have not inclined your ear, nor hearkened unto me. Because the sons of Jonadab the son of Rechab have performed the commandment of their father, which he commanded them; but this people hath not hearkened unto me: Therefore thus saith the Lord God of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will bring upon Judah and upon all the inhabitants of Jerusalem all the evil that I have pronounced against them: because I have spoken unto them, but they have

not heard; and I have called unto them, but they have not answered. (Jeremiah 35:12-17)

Stop looking at this as to say this is what God said to these people and start looking at it as He is saying the same thing to you today. Start placing yourself in the Bible. God does not respect anyone, nor does He favor anybody. God the Father does not change, so if He is talking this way then, He is saying the same thing now. You have heard of the King James Version of the Bible, right? Then God the Father has sent you Moses and the prophets. Did you hear how God said, Return ye now every man from his evil way. That every man includes you whether you are male or female. Now I feel that I need to place a complete chapter here, so I recommend that you listen to this as God the Father is talking to you personally.

And it shall come to pass, when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee, and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath driven thee, And shalt return unto the Lord thy God, and shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul; That then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee. If any of thine be driven out unto the outmost parts of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee, and from thence will he fetch thee: And the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it; and he will do thee good, and multiply thee above thy fathers. And the Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with

all thy soul, that thou mayest live. And the Lord thy God will put all these curses upon thine enemies, and on them that hate thee, which persecuted thee. And thou shalt return and obey the voice of the Lord, and do all his commandments which I command thee this day. And the Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thine hand, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy land, for good: for the Lord will again rejoice over thee for good, as he rejoiced over thy fathers: If thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which are written in this book of the law, and if thou turn unto the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul. For this commandment which I command thee this day, it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. It is not in heaven, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? Neither is it beyond the sea, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go over the sea for us, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? But the word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest do it. See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil; In that I command thee this day to love the Lord thy God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments and his statutes and his judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the Lord thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to possess it. But if thine heart turn away, so that thou wilt not hear, but shalt be drawn away, and worship other gods, and serve them; I denounce unto you this day, that ye shall surely perish, and that ye shall not prolong your days upon the land, whither thou passest over Jordan to go to possess it. I call heaven and earth

to record this day against you, that I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing: therefore choose life, that both thou and thy seed may live: That thou mayest love the Lord thy God, and that thou mayest obey his voice, and that thou mayest cleave unto him: for he is thy life, and the length of thy days: that thou mayest dwell in the land which the Lord swore unto thy fathers, to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob, to give them. (Deuteronomy 30:1-20)

Notice how it is up to you to choose life or death? Notice how life comes by turning back to the Father? Notice how the word is not in heaven, across the sea, or far away? It is within you if you allow the Father to show you, He will. Now I want to focus on something else that we are told in the same chapter, but a little earlier.

Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. (John 6:27)

Here is where we talk about the seal that is in the middle of my forehead. Yes, there is a cross in the middle of my forehead. I did not put it there, it just showed up in the later part of 2014. This was over three years after the Father called me to the Bible. This was in my fourth year of going through the laws of Moses. Not because I thought I had to, but because I believed and still do believe all that I read and heard.

Then one night, the wife by man's definition of a marriage, and I were playing cards at my mom's. My wife looked at me and asked me if I knew there was a cross on my head. I replied no there isn't. She said, yes there is, I immediately got up and went to a mirror, and much to my surprise, there was and there is.

After years of thinking about when and how it could have gotten there, I remembered something that had happened about a month

before this night of playing cards. My wife and I had just taken my daughter to Wayland, MO. To meet with her mother so that she could go back home. As we were driving back and going west on US 24, just east of Palmyra, MO. We both noticed this circle of amber looking lights. They only appeared for three or four seconds so we could not tell exactly what they were. We both, at the same time, asked what in the heck was that.

Now because I have read the book of Enoch, I know about portals. I have concluded that this was exactly what that was. It was about three or four months tops, after that, I woke up on my 45th birthday knowing what needed to be put in the book, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening. So, I strongly believe that is how and when the cross showed up on my forehead. I must make a little side note here, I often look in the mirror to make sure that it is still there. Sometimes the temper tantrums the I throw, make me wonder why our Father is still doing what He is doing with me. I mean, I know His love and patience for all of us is profound, but I don't know if I could put up with me the way He puts up with me.

But that is my seal that He has sealed me with. So, the books that I give you all are not perfect, but they show how I truly seek the Father, and the truth through the King James Version of the Bible. Starting with the first through this one, they teach you how to start thinking about all of this in a spiritual way instead of looking at the Bible as a book of the past. You will learn how the Father had me right about the Covid-19, in the very first book published in 2015. No, I did not name the illness itself, but He had me write about the illnesses that He said He would bring onto us, that are not written about in the Bible. Then in the third book, Jesus Christ in the flesh, He had me tell everyone to humble themselves and to let your guard down because this is going to be a devastating time for the world. That book was published in September of 2019, then it was announced in November of 2019, that man was fighting an unknown virus. Then He also had me introduce the spiritual flood that is called Egypt, that covers the earth today. I also seen this flood, just before the covid-19 ravaged the world.

All these books give you all a spiritual understanding of the Father, what He is doing, and why He is doing what He is doing. And as we showed you all in the first chapter, anyone without understanding, will perish.

For this cause we also, since the day we heard it, do not cease to pray for you, and to desire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will in all wisdom and spiritual understanding; That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleasing, being fruitful in every good work, and increasing in the knowledge of God; (Colossians 1:9-10)

There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus hath made me free from the law of sin and death. For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the flesh, God sending his own Son in the likeness of sinful flesh, and for sin, condemned sin in the flesh: That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. (Romans 8:1-5)

Now because I am appearing at the end of the world, you need to read the books that our Father has had me write. Yes, you could try to undergo all the schooling that I have endured over the last 12 years of my life, and learn the same way that I did. But you don't have time. That is the entire reason that He has put me through this schooling. It is so that the true believers can get an understanding of Him from a Spiritual perspective. This is when we listen to when we are told that no one come to the Father but by me.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me. (John 14:6)

I almost feel ridiculous for putting this in here because if you are reading this, you are reading the books. But I am feeling that our Father is telling me I must put this in here. I am the author of our salvation. That is why we are told that no man cometh unto the Father, but my me.

And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; (Hebrews 5:9)

Yes, this book will give some understanding of our Father and what He is doing. But this goes deeper than that. This is the 6th book that our Father has had me write, so yes, if you have read all of them to where you are at now, you are now eating my flesh and drinking my blood, in a Spiritual realm.

Then Jesus said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, Except ye eat the flesh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you. (John 6:53)

I have shown you all in previous books, about making fringes. God wants each person to make them their selves. Have you ever heard the expression, or used the expression, I did this with my own sweat and blood. It means that you worked your butt off getting that done, right? Well, that is what I have done with these books. The Father called me to the Bible back in 2011, and ever since then, I have been doing my best to live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. But, in March of 2016, I went out into the wilderness to die. As explained the previous books, it was a spiritual death and not physical.

Then I started my hard core, one on one, hands on training with the Father. Since then, I have devoted every minute of my life to learn all that I have learned, and have come to understand the Father and what He is doing and why He is doing what He is doing. I have poured out my soul. And I bring this understanding to you all in these books. I did this with my own sweat and blood. So, from a Spiritual perspective, you are eating my flesh, and drinking my blood by reading all the books that the Father has had me write. And if you have read them all, you are becoming one with us.

Now to bring this chapter to a close, we need to be listening to how the scriptures describe a person that does not have the doctrine of Christ.

The elder unto the elect lady and her children, whom I love in the truth; and not I only, but also all they that have known the truth; For the truth's sake, which dwelleth in us, and shall be with us for ever. Grace be with you, mercy, and peace, from God the Father, and from the Lord Jesus Christ, the Son of the Father, in truth and love. I rejoiced greatly that I found of thy children walking in truth, as we have received a commandment from the Father. And now I beseech thee, lady, not as though I wrote a new commandment unto thee, but that which we had from the beginning, that we love one another. And this is love, that we walk after his commandments. This is the commandment, That, as ye have heard from the beginning, ye should walk in it. For many deceivers are entered into the world, who confess not that Jesus Christ is come in the flesh. This is a deceiver and an antichrist. Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a full reward. Whosoever transgresseth, and abideth not in the doctrine of Christ, hath not God. He that abideth in the doctrine of Christ, he hath

both the Father and the Son. If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not into your house, neither bid him God speed: For he that biddeth him God speed is partaker of his evil deeds. Having many things to write unto you, I would not write with paper and ink: but I trust to come unto you, and speak face to face, that our joy may be full. The children of thy elect sister greet thee. Amen.
(2 John 1:1-13)

Now that we have done this chapter, you should be aware that the word of Jesus at no time, tells you that you do not need the Old Testament. In fact, we have shown that if you do not seek our Father with all of your heart, soul, and mind, you will not find Jesus in the scriptures. Yes, this this makes all those without this doctrine, an antichrist. Then we need to recall that many can represent one man, or one man can represent many in the Bible. Which means the antichrist has been here and not going to be showing up. He is already here.

The doctrine of Christ leads you back to the Old Testament and if anyone tells you differently, do not let that person into your house. Your house is you, so do not let this person convince you differently if you are starting to understand that you need all of the Bible and not just bits and pieces. If someone tells you that God of the Old Testament is mean, cruel, vindictive, or of any nature than love, rebuke them, and be ready to give an answer of love towards them showing how merciful our Father of the Old Testament is.

In the fourth book, Jesus is here, there is a chapter called Building your house on the Rock. I want to give a quick showing of some of the things in your house and where they are. I am going to show you where your table is, where your alter is, and your door to your closet is. But first let us listen to the parable of Jesus and building our house on the Rock.

Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but he that doeth

the will of my Father which is in heaven. Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. Therefore whosoever heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them, I will liken him unto a wise man, which built his house upon a rock: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell not: for it was founded upon a rock. And every one that heareth these sayings of mine, and doeth them not, shall be likened unto a foolish man, which built his house upon the sand: And the rain descended, and the floods came, and the winds blew, and beat upon that house; and it fell: and great was the fall of it. (Matthew 7:22-27)

Forasmuch as ye are manifestly declared to be the epistle of Christ ministered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of stone, but in fleshy tables of the heart. (2 Corinthians 3:3)

The sin of Judah is written with a pen of iron, and with the point of a diamond: it is graven upon the table of their heart, and upon the horns of your altars; (Jeremiah 17:1)

I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. (Romans 12:1)

PRECEPT SEVEN

Set a watch, O Lord, before my mouth; keep the door of my lips.(Psalm 141:3).

Now we need to be realizing where this Rock that we are to be building our house on.

He shall cry unto me, Thou art my father, my God, and the rock of my salvation. (Psalm89:26)

To shew that the Lord is upright: he is my rock, and there is no unrighteousness in him. (Psalm92:15)

But the Lord is my defence; and my God is the rock of my refuge.(Psalm 94:22)

How many have actually built their house on the Rock of the old testament just as Jesus told or is telling you to do? How many of these houses will stand in the end? It is not to late though, if you are still alive, you are able to repent and turn back to the Father and He will help you build your house.

Now one more thing before closing this chapter. We know that we are to go back to the Old Testament with the teaching of Jesus and or myself. But I want to show you how you are serving a different god if you refuse to turn back to God the Father of the Old Testament.

And as for thee, if thou wilt walk before me, as David thy father walked, and do according to all that I have commanded thee, and shalt observe my statutes and my judgments; Then will I stablish the throne of thy kingdom, according as I have covenanted with David thy father, saying, There shall not fail thee a man to be ruler in Israel. But if ye turn away, and forsake my statutes and my commandments, which I have set before you, and shall go and serve other gods, and worship them; (2 Chronicles 7:17-19)

You can hear the Father say that if we will do as David thy father, there shall not be a man to fail to be ruler in Israel. But if you turn away, and forsake His statutes and commandments which He has set before you, “King James Version” of the Bible, you shall serve other gods. That almost sounds separate without showing more verses but, remember if God the Father says it to one, then He is saying to us all. We all are equal in His eyes. We have all transgressed His law.

This is another amendment that I am making to the chapter that was not in the last book. This is where I need to say, if you are going to Follow Jesus, you are going to do as I have. You will learn of our Father, and you will start hearkening to His Voice just as I have done.

I am going to show a couple more things here. I am not taking the time to read this chapter over to see if I have already covered what I am getting ready to show. I need to have this manuscript done by the end of this month, and with everything I feel the Father is telling me to do, I am feeling crunched for time. I want to reflect on how I am the door.

I am the door: by me if any man enter in, he shall be saved, and shall go in and out, and find pasture. The thief cometh not, but for to steal, and to kill, and to destroy: I am come that they might have life, and that they might have it more abundantly. (John 10:9-10)

I have heard of so many people talking about Bible codes, numerology, astronomy, etc. These are the thieves that think they can get to the Father by some other means than learning of Him by listening to Him. I show you all how to get to know the Father through these books.

I also want to talk about how the truth shall make you free. I did glance over the chapter and saw that we were talking about this, but I did not show the most important meaning behind this. So, let us listen to when we are told this.

PRECEPT SEVEN

And ye shall know the truth, and the truth shall make you free. (John 8:32)

What is the truth? Is it when some tells you exactly how things happened? Is it when someone is telling a story of something that happened, or that is happening, and juicing the story up. Is it when someone is telling others every little detail about an event? Is truth around when an undercover police officer goes undercover to make a big bust? This officer is being truthful to his or her job, even though they are pretending to be someone their not. Is it the truth when someone is telling all that they remember about something, but have forgotten a lot of important details? These are just a few ways the truth can be twisted, so let us listen to how our Father defines truth.

Thy righteousness is an everlasting righteousness, and thy law is the truth. (Psalm 119:142)

There it is thy law is the truth. Yes., that means all of the laws of the Old Testament that many think do not mean anything to us, is in fact, what will set you free. When you all do as I have done, learn the law and learn of our Father, He will set you free just as He has with me.

Heaven or Hell

This is going to be a chapter in which you can decide for yourself if you would rather be in heaven or hell. I know this sounds like a silly question, but in all reality, you're in hell now. So, you need to decide whether or not you would rather be here in hell, or be in heaven with our Father just as I am. When our Father told me to do this chapter, I was hesitant because I have been showing you all that we are in hell in several of the books. But just after I got the three sentences done, our Father told me what we were doing with this chapter, and I got kind of excited.

Before we get going, I want to show a few verses in which clearly tell us that we are in hell.

The way of life is above to the wise, that he may depart from hell beneath. (Proverbs 15:24)

If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there. (Psalm 139:8)

And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell. (Matthew 10:28)

How can someone depart from hell if he or she isn't there already? How can someone make their bed in hell if they are not there already? Why would we fear the one can destroy both our body and soul in hell, if the body is not in hell already? Just ask yourself these questions before you dive into this chapter.

PRECEPT SEVEN

In my recent trip to Alaska, my brother told me that he had been taught that there will be a new heaven on earth. Well, he is kind of right, but kind of wrong also. See that is thinking of the scriptures with a carnal mind. That is thinking things will happen exactly how the Bible shows that it will. I realize that some are sealed to think that way, but at the same time, know to think carnally in enmity with God.

It hath pleased them verily; and their debtors they are. For if the Gentiles have been made partakers of their spiritual things, their duty is also to minister unto them in carnal things. When therefore I have performed this, and have sealed to them this fruit, I will come by you into Spain. (Romans 15:27-28)

That the righteousness of the law might be fulfilled in us, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For they that are after the flesh do mind the things of the flesh; but they that are after the Spirit the things of the Spirit. For to be carnally minded is death; but to be spiritually minded is life and peace. Because the carnal mind is enmity against God: for it is not subject to the law of God, neither indeed can be. So then they that are in the flesh cannot please God. But ye are not in the flesh, but in the Spirit, if so be that the Spirit of God dwell in you. Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his. And if Christ be in you, the body is dead because of sin; but the Spirit is life because of righteousness.(Romans 8:4-10)

I know that there is no chance to get those that have been sealed with the fruit to think carnally to think in a Spiritual form, but for those that are not sealed, it is time to put on your spiritual mind. And realize that everything about the King James Version of the Bible is spiritual. God is a Spirit, and He told the holy men what to write, so how could the Bible be anything but spiritual.

But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. (John 4:23-24)

Got to make a little side note here. I showed you all of how to look for the capital letter at the beginning of a word that is not a proper noun at the beginning at the sentence in the chapter The Engrafted Word. Did you see how many times the word Spirit is capitalized in the little section on Romans that we just read? Then do you see how God is a Spirit at the beginning of verse twenty-four in the book of John. Every time you see this Spirit capitalized and out of place, it is referring to God the Father.

Okay, back to topic. So, now that we are thinking of this in a spiritual form, let us listen to when we can hear of the new heaven and earth.

And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. (Revelation 21:1-5)

PRECEPT SEVEN

Nevertheless we, according to his promise, look for new heavens and a new earth, wherein dwelleth righteousness. (2 Peter 3:13)

Okay, before we go any further, I must tell you all that this is something that our Father is teaching me as I am writing this. It is blowing my mind, so to speak. We have shown you all, and more so in the last book, that the scriptures are a level of heaven. The more time we spend meditating on the scriptures, is elevating us to a level of heaven. This is what has got me just about to jump up and down with joy. When I read and listen to what is being said here in Revelation, I can see the new heaven, and the new earth. And I have been telling you all this since the second book, and I did not realize until just a few minutes ago. I am floored, I am in that new heaven, and I am on that new earth.

But to show you all how this happened, we are going to have to pretty much go over everything that I have done since the Father first called me to the Bible back in 2011. It will take quite a bit of explaining, but I am an example for you all.

For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: (1 Peter 2:21)

Now remember the holy men that wrote the scriptures were only writing what they were being told to write by our Father. And again, our Father told them to write it as if they had witnessed it, but they had not. Our Father made it sound as if it is past tense, because to Him, it is. But to us it wasn't and or isn't. Now when we listen to that in 1 Peter, it sounds as if Christ left us an example, but because it wasn't and isn't past tense for us, I am leaving you an example. And to leave you this example we need to go through the entire process. In my mind, I am not only an example, but I am also living proof that this is all real. We are not going to cover every detail, but we will be covering the major events, or changes that have happened with me

since He called me to the Bible. And then when we get to the end of the chapter, you will understand how I see the new heaven, and am on the new earth.

Actually, I am going to start a little before our Father called me to the Bible because something that I have talked about in other books, took place in 2009. Late August of 2009, I went through a breakup with a woman that I had been with for nine years. We had one daughter together. This was my fifth child from three different women. It was the 12th of September that year when I decided that I was done failing at everything I seemed to do. I tried to take my own life. I took a full bottle of sleeping pills after downing a liter of Tequilla. I remember it well, when I washed down the pills with the last of the Tequilla, I said I am sorry God, but I cannot do this anymore.

Needless to say, it didn't work. Apparently, the front door to my house was not locked and after I did this, Cathy found me on the floor and called the paramedics. I woke up the next day in the hospital, asking myself if I was in hell. The reason I mention this is because we must hate our own lives, if we are going to do this spiritually.

If any man come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and sisters, yea, and his own life also, he cannot be my disciple. (Lule 14:26)

No, I did not know anything about the Bible at this time. After being placed on anti-depressants and visiting a psychiatrist for a few months, I decided that I was going to start working out. I had seen this late-night info commercial advertising the Insanity workout. I decided I was going to do it. This was the late February of 2010. I remember because I was going to have to wait until the end of March before I would be able to fit the cost of this program into my budget. And because I new that this was going to be a hard-core workout program, I put the cigarettes down at the beginning of March. One night I was

driving in the semi, coming back from Memphis Tennessee, and just said screw it, I quit.

Then when I got the program, I found myself pushing through in the hopes that I would have a heart attack or something. I was still finding out that I just didn't want to live. But I figured if I killed over with a heart attack, then no one could say I took my own life. That would have been easier on my daughter than suicide. Obviously, that didn't work either.

During the time, I quit taking all anti-depressants that I was on. They didn't make me feel any different than how I felt before the suicied attemp, nor did I feel any different when I quit taking them. I just quit cold turkey. This is reminding me of another way that we can hear the engrafted word in which I forgot to show in that chapter. There are fifteen times that we are told to be sober, sober minded, or to think soberly in the New Testament. There are thirty verses that mention the our conscience also. These are spread throughout the the New Testament, but when we think about how many times each is mentioned, we can know that this our Father telling us that this is half the battle. As we showed you all in the last book, Declaring the End From the Beginning, in the chapter, Hearing our Father's voice, our Conscience is the only way we can hear Him. And I am certain that if I would have stayed on them, or gotten different anti-depressants, It would have made it more difficult to start my journey with the Father. We must remember, He is talking to all of us every day, all day long, He never shuts up. That is His words, as He had me tell you all in the last book.

Then it was May of 2011, or close to it when I was now on the Fargo ND laydown run. I would start in Rock Island, IL. And drive to Fargo ND and get a motel for the day, and then drive back the next night. I was getting tired of hearing the same old rock songs all the time, so I decided that I was going to find a talk show. Which was weird for me because back then I had the notion that if I turn on the radio, I wanted to listen to music and not people talking. But anyway, I found this well-known late-night talk radio program. They happened to be talking about the rapture. At this time, I had no idea

of what the rapture was, I had never heard of it before. I decided that I was going to look into this when I get back home in a couple of days. I got on YouTube and started watching videos about this rapture concept. Then went and bought me a King James Bible and started to look at these spots there were supposedly saying there is going to be a rapture.

Unbeknownst to me at this time, this is how the Father called me to the Bible. I could see without a doubt, right away, that there was no such thing. I created a YouTube channel and started making videos debunking the rapture. While I was doing this, I had decided that I was going to read the Bible. This was going to be a big challenge for me because I had never read a complete book for leisure before. But I was determined that I was going to do it. As I was reading it, I read something that made me feel as if it was talking about my personal life.

I am not going to show the scriptures here, as I did in the third and fourth books, but I will tell you what I read. First and foremost, I read how God would give your children to be raised by other men. I had just tried to take my own life for this very reason in 2009. I remember myself reading this for the very first time, I sat back in my office chair, because I was at my desk, and said this sounds like it is talking about me. It felt that personal, it still does when I sit here and think about it today. That caught my attention in a way that you cannot imagine.

Then I read how our Father said He would give us failing eyes. I have worn glasses since I was sixteen years old. Just after the so-called car accident in 1986. At that time, I thought the Bible was about people from thousands of years ago, but they didn't have glasses then. This also caught my attention because I had failing eyes. Then I read how He said that He gave us cleanness of teeth. At that time, I was under the impression that people from thousands of years ago, had no way to clean their teeth. This too, caught my attention.

It took me a few months to read the Bible for the first time. I was pretty impressed with myself; this was the first book that I had started and read it all the way through. Then when I started to read it

for the second time, it dawned on me, God never told us to celebrate birthdays and or man-made holidays. I remembered reading that God is perfect, righteous, and justified, so I quit immediately quit celebrating these days.

That is when I started my journey of trying to be obedient to all the laws of Moses. That is when I stopped eating unclean things, not because I wasn't supposed to eat those things, but because, my thought back then was that He is perfect, He said not to eat it, so I quit eating it. Then it was my trying to obey all the other laws. Yes, I lost a couple of jobs through the years because I would not work on certain Holy Days, but I never went without. I put all of my trust into the Father knowing that if I did what He said to do, He would always make sure that I would be okay.

After a couple of years, I wound up talking to an old high school sweetheart again. Then after talking for a few months, things got pretty serious, so we got married by man's laws. I started smoking again about the time things were getting serious between us. She smoked and I just started desiring to smoke again. Not sure why because I could sit with family members all day long with them smoking, and not bothering me a bit. But for some reason, when I was around her, I wanted to smoke. I am telling you this because something about me smoking comes soon.

We moved with my mom for a while, with the plans of helping her beings how she was a widow living on her own. I say plans because something happened at the place I worked at the time. I worked for a company that made trusses for new homes, and I was the delivery driver. I would help build them, load them on a roll-trailer, and deliver them to wherever they needed to go.

I had just finished loading a bunch of trusses on the trailer. I was on top of the trusses, strapping them down for delivery, when I somehow lost my footing and fell headfirst, about eight feet onto a gravel parking lot. Long story cut short; I shattered another disk in my neck. It was an on-the-job accident, and the employer didn't bat an eye filing a workers comp claim. Obviously, I had to take some time off work, and it took a while before workers comp to get rolling. And

they only paid a certain amount until the claim closed. That is why I say we had plans of helping my mom out. It wound up being that we needed a place to stay for a while.

Then after the claim closed, I received a fourteen-thousand-dollar check. I had already read the Bible two times well before this happened, but I remembered that I came into some money when I was in Iowa before and had intended on getting circumcised, but I blew the money for leisure instead. The reason I had wanted to get circumcised was because I had read in Ezekiel, that we cannot get close to God if we were not circumcised in the flesh, or in the heart.

Thus saith the Lord God; No stranger, uncircumcised in heart, nor uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter into my sanctuary, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel. (Ezekiel 44:9)

This was now the later part of 2014. So, now that I had this money, first and foremost, I paid to have this done. Not because I had to, but because I knew that God is perfect, and for me to be seeking this perfection, I needed to be listening to His perfect instructions. I just knew that was the only way that I would obtain this perfection. And with as messed up as my life had been up until I got called to the Bible, I wanted and still desire this perfection.

And because I believed, I was sealed. It was shortly after this circumcision, when the cross appeared in the middle of my forehead.

In whom ye also trusted, after that ye heard the word of truth, the gospel of your salvation: in whom also after that ye believed, ye were sealed with that holy Spirit of promise, (Ephessians1:13)

In the front of the fourth book, there is a picture of me and this cross on my forehead. And yes, this cross is how you all can know that the meat (knowledge) that give unto you, is worthy of life.

Labour not for the meat which perisheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give unto you: for him hath God the Father sealed. (John 6:27)

Then the rest of the money went to helping my mom out. And I know I have shown this many times in previous books, but I am being made perfect.

Who in the days of his flesh, when he had offered up prayers and supplications with strong crying and tears unto him that was able to save him from death, and was heard in that he feared; Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience by the things which he suffered; And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal salvation unto all them that obey him; (Hebrews 5:7-9)

As you can see and hear, I am being made perfect.

We need to bring something up here. I know some of you are thinking about how the scriptures say that if we be circumcised, we will be in debt to do the whole law.

For I testify again to every man that is circumcised, that he is a debtor to do the whole law. (Galatians 5:3)

There will be more on this in a later chapter. But let me remind you, I am not the only one that was not circumcised when I got the sign.

What shall we say then that Abraham our father, as pertaining to the flesh, hath found? For if Abraham were justified by works, he hath whereof to glory; but not before God. For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto

him for righteousness. Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt. But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness. Even as David also describeth the blessedness of the man, unto whom God imputeth righteousness without works, Saying, Blessed are they whose iniquities are forgiven, and whose sins are covered. Blessed is the man to whom the Lord will not impute sin. Cometh this blessedness then upon the circumcision only, or upon the uncircumcision also? for we say that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteousness. How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumcision, or in uncircumcision? Not in circumcision, but in uncircumcision. And he received the sign of circumcision, a seal of the righteousness of the faith which he had yet being uncircumcised: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumcised; that righteousness might be imputed unto them also: And the father of circumcision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which he had being yet uncircumcised. For the promise, that he should be the heir of the world, was not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith. (Romans 4:1-13)

As shown in previous books, I have had my faith since I was a teenager. But after hearing all that I did by reading the Bible, I knew I had to be circumcised to work closely with the Father.

Then we got a log cabin out in the middle of nowhere in north central Missouri. This is when we need to mention that my wife of the flesh at that time did not believe as I do. I mean she believed in a god, but she did not believe in our Father's perfection in the same

way that I do. My thought was that after some time of being with and around me, she would come to believe as I do.

For the unbelieving husband is sanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is sanctified by the husband: else were your children unclean; but now are they holy. But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a sister is not under bondage in such cases: but God hath called us to peace. For what knowest thou, O wife, whether thou shalt save thy husband? or how knowest thou, O man, whether thou shalt save thy wife? (2 Corinthians 7:14-16)

There was more to it also, she like to smoke a little marijuana now and again. I am a truck driver and cannot be around this stuff. So, the agreement was that she could not have anything to do with that when I was around because I was not going to lose my career over her liking to do this stuff. I tell you of this because it will be relevant in a few paragraphs.

By now, all my family and friends knew that I did not celebrate birthdays and man-made holidays. And everybody knew not to even call me on my birthday. Then my forty-fifth birthday came around. I was my way that evening to Chicago, IL. I would go there in the evening, sleep, and then deliver and pick up freight, and then go back home. On my way to Chicago, my brother called to wish me a happy birthday. I asked him why he was calling because everybody knew not to call. He said we I figured I would just call to talk and wish me a happy birthday. I told him we could talk but not to mention anything about my birthday. So, as soon as we started talking, he told me that he did not want to talk about the bible. A lot of people are intimidated by me because of my knowledge of the Bible. I told him okay, then about five minutes into the conversation, he brought up the Bible.

Oh my, I just started to tell him how all of this was going to work. I must have talked a good half hour or so explaining things that I had never even truly given any thought of before. He asked me where I was

getting all this knowledge because he had never heard of anything like it before. I replied, "I don't know but that is how it is going to work".

A couple of weeks before this, I had started to make an outline for a book, I wasn't sure why, but I felt that I needed to be writing a book about the Bible. Then two days after my forty-fifth birthday, I was working on the book. I was writing about all these things that I was telling my brother and so much more. It was like I just knew how to find whatever I was thinking about, and then knew how to explain it. I got up to go to the restroom, and as I was walking across the living room floor, I stopped, looked at my wife and asked, where did I get all this knowledge. Then I remembered the call with my brother on my birthday and it dawned on me that I had received this knowledge as a gift from our Father and not by man, on my birthday.

Every good gift and every perfect gift is from above,
and cometh down from the Father of lights, with
whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning.
(James 1:17)

I was jumping up and down with joy, I didn't understand it at the time, but I was exceedingly joyful for this newfound knowledge. That was the first book that we wrote, it was published and available by the end of April of 2015. During this time, I had lost the job that had me home every other day, and weekends because of one of the Holy Days in which I refused to work. This forced me to get a different job that required me to be gone all week long. I was still home on the weekends, but this did not make my wife happy.

It was around two months after the book was published, she left me while I was out on the road. This was two weeks after I had gotten this job hauling cars. This broke my heart because I truly felt she was the one for me. Then the third week with this job, that paid pretty good, I heard in my conscience to just move to the Lake of the Ozarks, Mo. And love your wife

This was all I was told to do, just go love your wife. I quit this job, drove down there and put in applications for a job that did not require

me to be gone. I found a job at a factory that paid \$9.05 an hour. It wasn't much, but it would work because I would be home every night. I had gotten me an apartment while I was trying to patch things up with my wife.

Then she wound up getting some serious infection in her pelvic area in which required her to need some sort of surgery, and a couple of weeks of total bed rest. At about the same time, I got bit by a brown lacrosse spider on my left ankle. I too, had to take a couple of weeks off of work. I remember when I got bit, I was staying the night with my wife where she was staying. I felt a stabbing pain on my ankle, and it almost immediately blistered. I didn't think much about it, so I continued to go to work. I needed the money. My job was to go around to all the different lines, and keep them stocked up on parts so that they could keep up with what they had to do. It was a very fast past job.

After two or three days of me doing my job, my limp got so bad that the company told me that I needed to go to the doctor to see what was happening with my ankle. I am glad they did this because of my hate of doctors, I wouldn't have gone until I had to. Well now I had to. I went to the emergency room, thinking that I would only be off work for a couple of days. The doctor took one look at my ankle and told me that this was a bite from a brown lacrosse.

So now I had to take this time off to and make daily trips to a local doctor so they could cut out the dead tissue every day so that it would stop growing. Beings how I was going to be off of work, and my wife was going to be on bed rest, I told her to come stay with me, and I would wait on here hand and foot so that she could recover from her surgery.

She did and all was going well. Then it came time that she and I both were recovering at about the same time, it was time for me to go back to work. I got a doctors release, and then she asked me about the holy days. I had let it slip my mind because I knew that I had to be getting back to work. But because she reminded me, I called in to work and told them that I couldn't come back for another day because of this holy day, they told me not to bother to come back at all. That

was the second job I lost because of me trying to obey the holy days. She moved back in with her son after she recovered.

Just after I lost that job, another job opened with a company that made floating concrete docks. They needed someone that could drive their semi, pulling a step deck trailer to haul a bunch of concrete docks they were making for a customer in Texas.

Over my years of experience, obviously I had a CDL for driving a semi. But I had also gained some experience working with concrete in the few years that I drove a concrete truck. I had also gained experience with forklifts, warehouse, and heavy equipment when I pulled LTL. This job entailed a lot of things that I had experience with.

Needless to say, I got this job, and I loved it. I would help build the concrete docks, load them, take them to Texas, and then unload them by myself. Then get a motel for the night and come back the next day and do it all over again. This drove my wife nuts because once again, I was driving where I was not home every night.

Then after a couple of months, the driving to Texas and a couple other areas stopped. I would just work around the shop nine or ten hours a day. Then I remembered that the Father told me to just go and love your wife, so that is what I was doing. I even started to eat pork because that is what she wanted. I even smoked a little marijuana with her because that made her feel at ease. I wasn't driving a semi at the time, so I figured I am here to just love my wife, so that is what I was doing.

I was not aware of how many times we are told to be sober, think soberly, of to think soberly at this time. But I do believe this is why we are told not to be unevenly yoked.

Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers:
for what fellowship hath righteousness with
unrighteousness? and what communion hath light
with darkness? (2 Corinthians 6:14)

She was stuck in her ways, I started to lean her way instead of sticking to what I firmly believed. If I would have stayed there, I would have destroyed what the Father was doing with me.

Then did Solomon build an high place for Chemosh, the abomination of Moab, in the hill that is before Jerusalem, and for Molech, the abomination of the children of Ammon. And likewise did he for all his strange wives, which burnt incense and sacrificed unto their gods. And the Lord was angry with Solomon, because his heart was turned from the Lord God of Israel, which had appeared unto him twice, And had commanded him concerning this thing, that he should not go after other gods: but he kept not that which the Lord commanded. (1 Kings 11:7-10)

If I would have stayed, I would have been worshipping a god that tells people that it is okay to be unsober minded. I would have been worshipping the god that tells people that it is okay to eat of the unclean things. I wouldn't have been honoring my Father.

And another instance that our Father is telling me to tell you all is something that happened before I was circumcised in the flesh. This was shortly after we moved in with my mom. This would have been christmas of 2013. And it was shortly after we became a couple. Pam couldn't understand why I wouldn't do christmas. And even though I knew better, I told her we could do the christmas thing. Now we need to listen to when God tells us that we are not to have take to many wives.

Neither shall he multiply wives to himself, that his heart turn not away: neither shall he greatly multiply to himself silver and gold.(Deuteronomy 17:17)

Yes, we are told about Soloman and how he had so many wives that his heart fell away from God. No, I did not have that many wives, but when I was with my wife back then, I was allowing my heart to

fall away from God so that I could make her happy. If I would have stayed, I would have destroyed what the relationship my Father and I have.

By this time, I was already always thinking about the Bible. The guys at work would laugh at me because I would be doing something, stop and start pointing at things while I was talking out loud. It was like I could see the scriptures in front of me and I was placing them together with my hands. I was connecting them so that I could understand how certain things would fit together.

Then it started to lay hard on my conscience, faith comes by hearing the word of God. I wasn't sure why this kept going through my mind, because in my mind, my faith was strong.

So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God. (Romans 10:17)

So, one night after work, I figured I had a computer and a laptop, I had unlimited internet, so I figured I would start listening to the Bible. I started with Genesis. I would listen every night when I got off work. I would listen for hours. It became addictive really fast. Then I heard when it states that we should devote the entire Sabbath day to God.

Thus saith the Lord; Take heed to yourselves, and bear no burden on the sabbath day, nor bring it in by the gates of Jerusalem; Neither carry forth a burden out of your houses on the sabbath day, neither do ye any work, but hallow ye the sabbath day, as I commanded your fathers. But they obeyed not, neither inclined their ear, but made their neck stiff, that they might not hear, nor receive instruction. And it shall come to pass, if ye diligently hearken unto me, saith the Lord, to bring in no burden through the gates of this city on the sabbath day, but hallow the sabbath day, to do no work therein; Then shall there enter into the gates of this city kings and princes sitting

PRECEPT SEVEN

upon the throne of David, riding in chariots and on horses, they, and their princes, the men of Judah, and the inhabitants of Jerusalem: and this city shall remain for ever. And they shall come from the cities of Judah, and from the places about Jerusalem, and from the land of Benjamin, and from the plain, and from the mountains, and from the south, bringing burnt offerings, and sacrifices, and meat offerings, and incense, and bringing sacrifices of praise, unto the house of the Lord. But if ye will not hearken unto me to hallow the sabbath day, and not to bear a burden, even entering in at the gates of Jerusalem on the sabbath day; then will I kindle a fire in the gates thereof, and it shall devour the palaces of Jerusalem, and it shall not be quenched. (Jeremiah 17:21-27)

If thou turn away thy foot from the sabbath, from doing thy pleasure on my holy day; and call the sabbath a delight, the holy of the Lord, honourable; and shalt honour him, not doing thine own ways, nor finding thine own pleasure, nor speaking thine own words: Then shalt thou delight thyself in the Lord; and I will cause thee to ride upon the high places of the earth, and feed thee with the heritage of Jacob thy father: for the mouth of the Lord hath spoken it. (Isaiah 58:13-14)

Without showing all the details of when the Sabbath is and when it begins, I would get home from work on Friday afternoon, wait for the minute the light from the previous day would go away, and then start listening to the Bible. If you want to understand this better, we brake all this down in the first book, Father, forgive us, we haven't been listening.

While I was waiting for the sun to go down, I would prepare whatever food I would need for the Sabbath day so that I would not

have to worry about doing anything during the Sabbath, except listen to the word of God. I would not take phone calls, nor answer the door if someone showed up. I was devoting the entire Sabbath to our Father and Him only.

I would listen until I was ready for bed on Friday nights. Then when I awoke on Saturday morning, I would immediately start listening to the Bible, and would listen until the light from the Sabbath day went away.

And then I would still listen to the Bible on the other six days of the week. I started to hear the engrafted word in which told me to not take two coats for my journey. Take no food or water for your journey. I started to feel like I was going to go on a journey to die. At this time, I did not know who I was or am, so I thought I was going out to die to be with the Father and Jesus. How could I go wrong, is what was going through my mind. This was me going out to die in a suicide fashion, but this time I wasn't doing it because I was sick of life. It was because of what I was hearing.

I knew that I would not need anything that I owned when I died, so I started giving everything away. I had a fellow worker at the place I was working that was living in the back of his truck. This truck was financed through pay every week places, and Carl was falling behind on his payments. They were fixing to repossess his truck, so I figured I would just give him my car.

There was a trailer out in the country that he was going to be able to move into once he did some remodeling in it. So, I gave him a lot of my furniture as well. I also had some old collector's coins that I gave him. I gave my computers to my mom because hers was going bonkers on her. I had an old Lionel train set that my dad had given to me before he passed, I gave it to my brother. I gave my scuba diving equipment to another fellow worker. Oh yea, that was something that I forgot to mention about that job. Sometimes we would have to work underwater, so being a certified scuba diver was a plus.

By this time, my wife and I were drifting apart again. It was like I changed everything that she couldn't stand when she left, but now

she hated everything that I changed. It just seemed that no matter what I did, I could not please her.

Then on Saturday night, March 5th of 2016, I thought it was time to start this journey. Carl had been staying there for the last few days, so I told him that he could stay there until the landlord kicked him out. I figured that would be better than him sleeping in the back of his truck. I gave him all the money that I had on me because it wasn't going with me, and he needed it.

I started walking from the apartment until I found some place that I thought would be a good place to die. After being out there for a while, I fell asleep. I woke up freezing because I was only wearing a sweat jacket. I awoke about four in the morning on the 6th. Okay, I figured something wasn't right. I started walking back to the apartment, and after about an hour of walking, I spotted a highway patrol car sitting on the shoulder watching traffic. I asked if she could give me a ride back to the apartment because I was now tired of walking and cold. She wanted my ID, but I had told her that I left it at the apartment when I left. I told her that I just went for a walk and just didn't bring anything with me. I gave her my driver license number and social security number so that she could know I was not somebody that was wanted by the law. The truth is, I left it at the apartment because I truly felt I was going to die.

Then as I got back to the apartment, Carl was still up looking over the car. He was amazed that I had gave him the car. He asked why I was back, and I told him that I wasn't sure, something wasn't right. Then the next day, I got to thinking that the car wasn't paid off. I never moved out of the apartment. I still had the cable box and such. So, I figured there were more things that I needed to take care of before this happened. Then I remembered the scriptures telling us to move our stuff during the day, so that others could see and wonder why.

Therefore, thou son of man, prepare thee stuff for removing, and remove by day in their sight; and thou shalt remove from thy place to another place in their

sight: it may be they will consider, though they be a rebellious house. (Ezekiel 12:3)

That very day, we started moving things from my apartment to out in the country where Carl was staying. He was sleeping across from this trailer, in one of his friends properties. Then I told Carl that I needed some money back so I could go and pay the car off. There was only a couple more payments due, and that was well covered with the money that I had given him. I told Carl to let them know at work that I wasn't coming back because I just knew this was going to happen, I just wasn't sure of how and when.

Then on Monday, while Carl was at work, I took the cable box back, had the utilities taken out of my name, and let the landlord know that I was not going to be living there anymore. I tied up a few other loose ends before I drove the car up to where I had it financed and paid it off. Went back down to the Ozarks and gave Carl the keys to the car again. And gave him the money I had left over. I asked Carl if it was okay if I slept in the car that I gave him until I knew for sure what was going to happen. Obviously he said I could. That evening, Carl suggested that we go get a single man tent, and something to help me stay warm with the money I gave him. I thought this would be a good idea because I was determined that the next time, I wasn't coming back. So, we did.

Then that night, I fell asleep in the car. At 4:13 am on the 8th, I awoke from a dream. To this day, I remember this dream, vividly. I was watching television in this dream. Then a newscast came on with a woman talking. She had long black hair. She said all those to report for duty are David Jenkins and Randy for jerry rigging. I lit a cigarette, took a few sips of coffee that was in a thermos, while I thought about it. I knew it, it was time to go. Now I am out in the country somewhere down in the Ozarks. There was a gravel road that went south from where I was sleeping. I put finished the coffee, left the thermos by the car so that Carl would see that I was gone. And started walking.

I walked for a about three hours or so. I know this because by the time I found the area I was going to stay, it was daylight. Anyhow,

after walking for a while, I found this creek that looked like it led to the middle of nowhere. I followed this creek until I found an area that was a long way off of the gravel road that I had been walking on. I figured this was out of site from everybody, so this would be a good spot to die without anyone interrupting me.

I set up the tent and spent the rest of the day talking to the Father. Even though I was next to a creek, I would not drink the water because I figured if I did, it would take longer for me to die. Then that night, I went to bed inside the tent. I had some heat in the can that we had gotten at the store to help me stay warm. So, I would open that up for a while at a time, until I was ready to go to sleep. Then as I was sleeping, I awoke because it started to rain. Not giving much thought to it, I just ignored it and went back to sleep.

Then the next morning when I awoke, I was lying in a pool of water. I didn't think about treating the tent, so it leaked, and apparently, quite a bit. I had slept in my clothes, so they were soaked. I was out in the middle of nowhere, so I stripped down naked and laid my clothes out to dry. Unbeknownst to me at that time, this is how I left the fleshly world at that time with nothing, just as I came into the fleshly world when I came out of my mother's womb.

Then later that evening, I started to get low on cigarettes because I didn't bring that many with me. I figured this didn't seem to be working, so I packed things up and started my way back to where Carl was staying. As I was walking back, I was telling the Father that I failed him because I was still alive. I still hadn't drunk anything, so on my way back, I stopped at this little creek to get a drink. I figured I have already messed up, so why not. I could see things floating in the water, but I remembered the scriptures saying that I could drink anything and it would not harm me.

They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover. (Mark 16:18)

So, I took a few cupped handfuls of water. I was exhausted during this walk back because I still hadn't eaten anything and had only a few sips of water. I started to get confused about my way back because there had been a few forks in the road when I walked out there. And it was dark also. I stopped at a house to ask for directions and asked if I could get a glass of water. She told me no for the water, but did give the directions. I could understand why she told me no. I was a stranger, and I did not specify that I only wanted a glass of water. She probably thought I wanted to come inside her house to get a drink. And that would definitely be wrong, but I didn't specify. At no time, did I want to come inside, I just wanted a glass of water. Either way, all was good.

After getting back to where Carl was staying, he and his friends were all outside at a picnic table. Carl asked why I was back. I told him that I wasn't sure. He told me that he didn't realize I was gone the day before until he got back from work. His friends asked me if I wanted anything because they had just got done with dinner. All I wanted was a glass of water. Carl asked if I was going to take the car back and I told him no, I wasn't sure what I was going to do, but I was not taking anything back.

After a couple of hours, I finally called my mom to tell her what had just down. She was concerned so she asked if she could send my brother that was staying with her, down to Columbia, MO. To pick me up. So, I had Carl take me there to meet up with my brother. Then we went to my mom's.

Still thinking that I had messed up, I started to think about the time I was out there. It was then when I realized that I was out in the wilderness for forty hours. I just knew it meant something. So, I started to think maybe I didn't completely mess up, but I was still thinking that I was supposed to die. Then I realized that when this all happened, it happened on the new moon of that month. I know that the month in God's calendar, starts on the new moon. Same thing, I wasn't sure what it meant, but I knew it meant something.

While I was there, mom let me use the laptop I had given her so that I could listen to the Bible. I would sit all day, every day and do

nothing but listen. I would take brakes and come into the kitchen and sit with mom talking about the Bible. It was fascinating because the Father was showing me so much. I was hearing everything differently. And when I would hear something that was jaw dropping, I would go and talk to mom and my brother about it.

While I was there, my brother told me that I can't be right with God because I smoke cigarettes. At first, I didn't know how to respond. Then about a minute or two later I looked my brother in the eyes and said, if I put the cigarettes to try to save my life, I will lose my life with the Father.

For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it. (Mark 8:35)

Then there was another night while I was there, that my brother said that he couldn't believe or understand how all this knowledge was coming to me. He stated that he thought I should go into a mental institution, be put on meds, and then if I could still hear the things I was hearing, then he would believe me. He spent years going to Jehovah's witness church. Then I told him that thou shalt not tempt thy Lord God.

And saith unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down: for it is written, He shall give his angels charge concerning thee: and in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. Jesus said unto him, It is written again, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. (Matthew 4:6-7)

I knew something was happening with me, and it was big. But I did not need to prove anything to anyone. It was not and is not up to me to get others to believe. Why should I have to go through something that is way out there, just so you might believe. And why

should I have to make things more difficult for the Father to do what He is doing, just because you do not believe?

I mean I would help with the chores around the house, but the majority of my time was listening to the Bible. I had to figure out what I was doing wrong. Or at least what I thought I was doing wrong.

Then after being there for about two and a half weeks and me listening to the Bible the whole time, I started to really feel bad because I didn't die. Then one night, I took a knife with me and started to just walk around town. I remembered the scriptures saying that if we fail God, put a knife to the throat.

And put a knife to thy throat, if thou be a man given
to appetite.(Proverbs 23:2)

Obviously, I was taking this out of contents, but I just kept thinking that I should take a knife to my throat. I found a secluded spot in town, held the knife to my throat, and just contemplated on whether or not I should do this. Then all the sudden, it was like I could almost hear the words, David, you died a spiritual death and not a physical death.

It was just a couple of days after this that my mom said that I needed to leave. She too, could not handle hearing all the things that I was learning. I was showing them a completely different way of thinking about the Bible. Then that evening my brother that live in South Dakota called. He stated that he was thinking about going to get my other brother in Colorado to help him with his flooring business. He was falling behind because so many jobs needed to be done. After talking for a bit, we got off the phone. Then about ten or fifteen minutes later, I called my brother back. I told him that I would come up there and help him on one condition. I told him that he could not pay me. All I wanted was a place to sleep, something to eat, and cigarettes. He agreed, so my mom bought me a bus ticket. She and one of her friends had given me around \$40 or so, so that I would have something. Her friend had also bought me two pair of jeans, two

shirts and some under clothes while I was there. Just so I had more than what I was wearing because I had given everything else away.

I need to tell you all of a dream that I had while I was at my mom's.

For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction, That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword. He is chastened also with pain upon his bed, and the multitude of his bones with strong pain: So that his life abhorreth bread, and his soul dainty meat. (Job 33:14-20)

When this happened, I did not know about this in Job. But in the dream, I saw a man sitting behind what looked like to be a judges bench. I could not see his face. But he was wearing a blue robe with white banded stripes on the sleeves. As I was standing there, he started to move his arm to point at something as he told me that these people make little to no difference to me. Now because I am truck driver, I am going to say that arm was at least as big as my tractor trailer unit. I slowly turned around to see what he was pointing at and I saw a book that was open. This book was as big as a two- or three-story house.

At first, I didn't know what that meant, but as time went on, our Father explained it to me. At that time, right after the baptism, I thought I had to get others to do what I was doing. That would be my immediate family. He was telling me that others did not matter to Him, I was the only one going through what I was going through.

Then I went to my brother's to work for him so that he could get caught up. There was a couple of times that he tried to pay me some cash, but I would not take it. In the evenings, I would listen to

the Bible, but I would play free online poker at the time, so I wasn't learning much while I was there. My brother also likes to build models and such, so he bought one for me to build to do something in the evenings. It was like he wanted me to do something other than listen to the Bible. I worked on the model rocket for a few nights, but then told him that he would have to finish it because I just wasn't into it.

While I was there, my brother seemed to want to figure out what was going on with me, so he started listening to the Bible also. He would listen, with headphones on, as he was sitting at his computer playing some online game. He made it through the first four books of the Bible when him and his wife went to the grocery store on a Saturday. When they got back, he started yelling at me because he was looking at the ingredients of things to see if they contained pork. He is a person that loves pork chops and such. To the best of my knowledge, all I can say is that I think it scared the living daylights out of him. That is what I have been telling you, listening to the King James Version of the Bible is extremely powerful.

Then after being there for about six weeks, he and his wife went to a man-made church. When they got back, they started to argue with me and tell me that Jesus died for our sins so we could eat the unclean things. Needless to say, this became a huge argument. They were using a different version of the Bible that said something like that. But I knew that God said not to eat the unclean things and I knew He was perfect, so if He said it, what He said is perfect also. I didn't and won't change His perfection. It was such a long and loud argument, that I finally said that is it, I got to go. I told them that I had to go because my peace had come back to me. I no longer felt that I was welcome there.

And if the house be worthy, let your peace come upon it: but if it be not worthy, let your peace return to you. And whosoever shall not receive you, nor hear your words, when ye depart out of that house or city, shake off the dust of your feet. (Matthew 10:13-14)

I gathered what little I owned, put it into the backpack that I had and started walking. I walked about eight miles outside of town before deciding to walk back. While I was walking back, I asked the Father to send someone to give me a ride because I was tired of walking. Lo and behold, just a short time after, a young man stopped and offered me a ride. When I got back, I sat in the work van for a bit before going back into the house. We decided to just let things be. I went to sleep on the couch as normal.

When I awoke the next morning, I sat up and the words just came out of my mouth. David, I never said the unclean things were food. I immediately got my Bible and went to book of Leviticus 11. Sure enough, listen to this.

Speak unto the children of Israel, saying, These are the beasts which ye shall eat among all the beasts that are on the earth. (Leviticus 11:2)

There it is, He tells us right there in the second verse. These are the beasts in which we shall eat. I won't show the entire chapter, but He is telling us we are to eat the clean beasts. Then He tells us that the unclean things are not for us to eat. So, He never said the unclean things are food.

As I told you all in the third and fourth book, I did pork chops one time while I was there. Not because I didn't believe, rather because it was a matter of showing him that I was concerned about his feelings. And that was the very last time that I ate anything unclean. Now I am to the point that I won't eat it and I do not care how it makes someone feel. But at the same time, I will never tell you that you cannot eat it.

If any of them that believe not bid you to a feast, and ye be disposed to go; whatsoever is set before you, eat, asking no question for conscience sake. But if any man say unto you, this is offered in sacrifice unto idols, eat not for his sake that shewed it, and for conscience sake: for the earth is the Lord's, and the fulness thereof: Conscience, I say, not thine own, but

of the other: for why is my liberty judged of another man's conscience? For if I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil spoken of for that for which I give thanks? Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatsoever ye do, do all to the glory of God. Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gentiles, nor to the church of God: Even as I please all men in all things, not seeking mine own profit, but the profit of many, that they may be saved. (1 Corinthians 10:27-33)

I got into the van to go to work on Monday morning and told my brother, I want to go to this so-called man-made church with you next week because I was going to show this pastor what the Father had just confirmed with me. You can just imagine how well that went over.

Then later in that day, I thought my brother was going to tell me that I had to leave. He didn't that evening, so I thought, maybe tomorrow. Than sure enough, Tuesday evening after work, my brother said that I had to go. He told me that he didn't want me to go to work with him anymore. I could use this time to find a place to go. Then I remembered a company that I worked for back in 2007, when I had to get off the road for a bit. They had told me to just give them a call if I ever wanted to come back.

I gave them a call after they confirmed a few things, they hired me. I had to wait until Friday before I could get a bus going to Texas. Sin other words, I was at my brothers for forty days, and forty nights. Now I didn't understand this at the time, but as the Father showed me some time later, this was the forty days of fasting.

Cry aloud, spare not, lift up thy voice like a trumpet, and shew my people their transgression, and the house of Jacob their sins. Yet they seek me daily, and delight to know my ways, as a nation that did righteousness, and forsook not the ordinance of their God: they ask of me the ordinances of justice; they take delight in approaching to God. Wherefore have we fasted, say

they, and thou seest not? wherefore have we afflicted our soul, and thou takest no knowledge? Behold, in the day of your fast ye find pleasure, and exact all your labours. Behold, ye fast for strife and debate, and to smite with the fist of wickedness: ye shall not fast as ye do this day, to make your voice to be heard on high. Is it such a fast that I have chosen? a day for a man to afflict his soul? is it to bow down his head as a bulrush, and to spread sackcloth and ashes under him? wilt thou call this a fast, and an acceptable day to the Lord? Is not this the fast that I have chosen? to loose the bands of wickedness, to undo the heavy burdens, and to let the oppressed go free, and that ye break every yoke? Is it not to deal thy bread to the hungry, and that thou bring the poor that are cast out to thy house? when thou seest the naked, that thou cover him; and that thou hide not thyself from thine own flesh? Then shall thy light break forth as the morning, and thine health shall spring forth speedily: and thy righteousness shall go before thee; the glory of the Lord shall be thy reward. (Isaiah 58:1-8)

Remember how I told you all that I would go help him on one condition, and that was that he could not pay me? That is a true fast. I worked for my brother for forty days and nights, for no reward.

Ther first couple of weeks that I drove for them, I would listen to the Bible on my phone, via data, hooked up to my stereo, as I drove. When I got the money, I bought me a Bible on CD. Then a few months after I was working for this company, I called my mom. In the conversation, she told me that she was going to a doctor's appointment in Columbia, MO. that afternoon. I thought it was kind of weird because I told her that I would be coming through Columbia in just a bit. She thought this was great because we could meet up and I could go to the doctors with here and my sister. I had a few hours that I could stop, so I did. We met up at a truck stop in that area, and went

to the doctor's office. During the visit, the doctor had said that she needed surgery. Between the other things the doctor said, and the expression on my mom's face, I knew that she wasn't going to survive the surgery. I couldn't tell anyone because I thought the Father had me there so He could show me what is to come.

Howbeit when he, the Spirit of truth, is come, he will guide you into all truth: for he shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear, that shall he speak: and he will shew you things to come.
(John 16:13)

I felt that this was between the Father and me. And I definitely knew that I was not to tell them who I was in the Bible.

Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ. (Matthew 16:20)

My brother in Missouri and I had been talking about putting a new bathtub in the bathroom for when she got home from surgery. I was going to send the money and he was going to install it. Then she went into surgery while I was in Maine. I had stopped in this big gravel lot for trucks to take a 34 hours restart. While there, I had been calling back and forth between my sister, and my brother that was staying at my mom's house. Between the calls, I started to think that I misunderstood my mom not making it through the surgery. Then I tried to go on personal commute on my Electronic Log Device, so I could go to a Walmart about fifteen miles away. I was going to send the money to my brother. But the Eld would not let me go on personal commute. I restart it several times, and finally called into the company and asked why it wasn't letting me to do so. They even rebooted it in their system, but it didn't work. I didn't have the hours to go on the clock, so this made it so that I couldn't move. I tried a few more times to see if it would let me and then it hit me, it wasn't

letting me because the Father was letting me know that there was no need. Mom wasn't going to need it.

Then the next morning my sister called me with joy, the doctor said that she could go home later that day. I was happy, but confused because it seemed that I misunderstood everything. Then a couple of hours went by, and my sister called me crying. Mom had passed away. She was up having an assisted recovery walk, when she had a cardiac arrest, and there was nothing they could do.

I was sad that my mom passed, but relieved that I didn't misunderstand. Then shortly after my mom passed, my daughter's mother told me that my daughter had something to tell me, but she wasn't ready yet. I told Cathy that Erin was pregnant. They were shocked because I knew before she told me. I am not really sure how I knew; I just knew. But keep in mind, my daughter was only fifteen when she got pregnant. That is why she didn't want to tell me. It didn't bother me at all because I was told somehow that she was pregnant. I just felt that it was supposed to be.

Then around June of the following year, my brother in South Dakota called me asking me if I wanted to go a family reunion on August 11th. I told Him I only do what the Father wants me to do, and I doubt that He is going to send me there.

At about the same time, my daughter was telling me that the baby was due on the 15th of August. I told her and her mom that I think the baby is going to be born on the fourth. They both insisted that the doctor said the 15th. Then on both the second and third days of the month of August, I got a call from Cather telling me that that Erin went to the hospital with contractions, but was sent home. Then I got a call on the fourth, telling me that Erin had her baby today. Yes, she was premature, but I understood what I was being told again. Then the Father sent me through Davenport, Iowa so I could see my granddaughter. And even being just a couple days old, she looked me in the eye as I was holding her, and it just felt like she knew who I was. Not being her grandpa, but she knew who I was in the Bible.

Then on that very load, lo and behold, I was going through Ohio, and it just happened that I could stop for the family reunion on my

dad's side of the family. This took place on August 11th. This was my mom and dad's anniversary when they were my mom and dad. I knew this was the Father telling me that my mom and dad were back together. But there is something I didn't tell you about the 4th of August, that was my dad's birthday.

Yes, this is how the Father started teaching me about reincarnation. At that time, I thought that my mom and dad were now one.

For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. (Ephesians 5:31-32)

So, that is how I explained it in the second book. As I was writing this in the book, my daughter became pregnant again. So, when I was writing the chapter on reincarnation, explaining that my mom and dad were now one, our Father had me say that the next baby could be my other parent. I will save some time now, and just let you know that I did the same thing in the third book also. The fourth book explains how my first granddaughter is my mom, and my second granddaughter is my dad, reincarnated.

I know we are jumping back and forth, but for the first year or so, I would keep my hair short. When I wrote the first book, it had caught my attention that it was a shame for a man to have long hair.

Doth not even nature itself teach you, that, if a man have long hair, it is a shame unto him? (1 Corinthians 11:14)

So, when I wrote about that in the first book, I thought that meant that Jesus did not have long hair. And that stuck in my mind even though our Father told me who I was shortly after He had me get back in a truck. I was listening to the Bible for probably the sixth or seventh time by now, and then I heard something in the book of Revelation.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Notwithstanding I have a few things against thee, because thou sufferest that woman Jezebel, which calleth herself a prophetess, to teach and to seduce my servants to commit fornication, and to eat things sacrificed unto idols. And I gave her space to repent of her fornication; and she repented not. (Revelation 2:20-21)

Now this was just a few weeks after I went to work for this company. At this time, I thought the book of Revelation was supposed to be Jesus speaking. I heard this and immediately thought of the eight months that I spent down in the Ozark area, and how I had changed everything that my wife hated, but it turned out that didn't work either. That was when I knew who I was. I thought that my wife was this Jezebel. But I didn't know how any of this worked.

So, after a year or so of me driving for this company, I was getting my hair cut. Now this is kind of weird, but I would not touch my beard. When she grabbed a hold of my beard to trim it, I told her no, the scriptures say not to cut thy beard. As soon as I said it aloud, I remembered that the same scriptures tell us not to cut our hair also.

Ye shall not round the corners of your heads,
neither shalt thou mar the corners of thy beard.
(Leviticus 19:27)

Needless to say, that was the last time I got my hair cut. Then after about two years or so of being with this company, I started to feel as if I should write another book. This is the second book, Behold a greater than Jonas is here. This is the book that starts to show how everybody is part of the One Son of God. regardless of color, race, nationalism, size, or shape. I also started to feel that I need to go to Israel. I had to order a new birth certificate because when I did the baptisms, I had gotten rid of everything. I had it sent to my sister's house in Missouri.

I was down in Florida taking a few days off because I was working on the book. I had put my headset on and told it to call Cathy. But for

some reason, it called my sister Kim. When she answered, she told me right away that some mail from New York had arrived for me. I knew right away that this was my birth certificate. So, now I knew that I needed to get my passport if I was going to go to Israel.

During this time, I started having a rough time, so I started second guessing whether or not I was supposed to be writing this book. So, I cancelled it with the publisher. I remember this because I was on I-44 in Oklahoma when I stopped at a service area in the median. I was coming out of this rest area and hadn't even gone a mile when I got stopped by a cop. He told me that I wasn't supposed to be in the left lane unless I was passing. I was totally confused because I had to be in the left lane to leave the service area. I hadn't even had time to get my truck up to speed. I didn't do anything wrong.

About an hour after this happened, I got a call from my sister. She told me that I had received some sort of check or something from the Xulon Publishing. I was on a load that was going to Indiana, so I could route myself through there to get the check. It would be about a hundred miles out of the way, but I could do it.

As I was driving there, I got to thinking about the cop that had stopped me. Then I was thinking about Kim calling me to tell me that I had a check there from the publishers. Then it hit me, it wasn't the cop stopping me, it was the Father telling me that I have to write the book. That is what I was showing everybody in the book that I was writing. Everybody is a servant and or vessel of God.

They continue this day according to thine ordinances:
for all are thy servants. (Psalm 119:91)

Likewise, ye husbands, dwell with them according to knowledge, giving honour unto the wife, as unto the weaker vessel, and as being heirs together of the grace of life; that your prayers be not hindered. (1 Peter 3:7)

If the woman is the weaker vessel, that the man must be the stronger vessel of God. I know that this isn't the only spot that talks about how we are vessels, but because I am not rewriting all the books,

I am not going to show all of the Bible verses to verify everything. And by no chance am I including all the details, so for a much better of understanding, then you need to read all of the books. What we are trying to show you here is how I have been living in a new earth by listening to the new heaven, the scriptures.

So, as I was saying, it was not the cop that stopped me, it was the Father telling me to write the book. I called them right away and just gave them the money back. Now it was time to get my passport. By this time, I had to renew my license, so I asked Cathy if I could use her address because to have a CDL, you must have a home address. I have nowhere to lay my head, or better said, nowhere to call home. So, that is where I now have all my mail sent and so forth.

Okay, I need to back up a little here. I am not sure of exactly the Father was teaching this, but I do know it was shortly after He put me in the truck. This might seem to be taking us off topic, but it is something that the Father taught me long before I went to Israel and I do not want to leave it out. I am not going to give all the details because this is explained in the second book.

There was a time that I used to help my son out financially all the time. Then it got to the point that he wouldn't work. It seemed all that all he wanted to do was play video games all day, and let others give him money to pay bills when his wife couldn't cover them. Then it got to the point that the Father would kept putting something on my conscience.

For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat. For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busybodies. Now them that are such we command and exhort by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work, and eat their own bread. (2 Thessalonians 3:10-12)

I stopped helping, I wouldn't give him a dime. If you were to ask him, he would tell you that I wouldn't even buy a pack of gum. I

told him that I couldn't help him anymore until he got a job because of what the scriptures said. Then I got a call one weekend. He told me that he found a job and that he started orientation of Monday. I thought this was great. Then about an hour after we got off the phone, my brother that was living in Denver, CO. called me asking for a hundred dollars because they were stuck at Walmart. He wanted me to send him a hundred dollars because their son wanted hot food. He told me that they had food, but nothing hot.

I told him that I would have to ask the Father because all the money that I have belongs to Him. Immediately after getting off the phone, my conscience brought me to when Abraham almost sacrificed his son.

And Abraham took the wood of the burnt offering, and laid it upon Isaac his son; and he took the fire in his hand, and a knife; and they went both of them together. And Isaac spake unto Abraham his father, and said, My father: and he said, Here am I, my son. And he said, Behold the fire and the wood: but where is the lamb for a burnt offering? And Abraham said, My son, God will provide himself a lamb for a burnt offering: so they went both of them together. And they came to the place which God had told him of; and Abraham built an altar there, and laid the wood in order, and bound Isaac his son, and laid him on the altar upon the wood. And Abraham stretched forth his hand, and took the knife to slay his son. And the angel of the Lord called unto him out of heaven, and said, Abraham, Abraham: and he said, Here am I. And he said, Lay not thine hand upon the lad, neither do thou any thing unto him: for now I know that thou fearest God, seeing thou hast not withheld thy son, thine only son from me. And Abraham lifted up his eyes, and looked, and behold behind him a ram caught in a thicket by his horns: and Abraham went and took

PRECEPT SEVEN

the ram, and offered him up for a burnt offering in the stead of his son. (Genesis 22:6-13)

My brother in Colorado, was the ram caught in the thicket by his horns. As we have shown in previous books, we are the beast in which those that have dominion over our bodies, sacrifice. We all know that we counted as sheep for the slaughter, right?

As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long; we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter. (Romans 8:36)

But I was like a lamb or an ox that is brought to the slaughter; and I knew not that they had devised devices against me, saying, Let us destroy the tree with the fruit thereof, and let us cut him off from the land of the living, that his name may be no more remembered. (Jeremiah 11:19)

They shall roar together like lions: they shall yell as lions' whelps. In their heat I will make their feasts, and I will make them drunken, that they may rejoice, and sleep a perpetual sleep, and not wake, saith the Lord. I will bring them down like lambs to the slaughter, like rams with he goats. (Jeremiah 51:38-40)

The alters that we make spiritual sacrifices on, are on our hearts. So, I too, almost sacrificed my own son just as Abraham. Then my very next load, I went through where he was living at the time, and helped him and his family get a new car.

I wound up applying for a new passport in Texas. I had one before, but it got left behind when I got baptized with the Holy Ghost, or was born into the new world. When it finally coming in, knew that this was the time for me to go to Israel. I thought that I was going there to stay because when you listen to the Bible, it sounds like Israel is

where a lot of this takes place. But I wasn't thinking about how the scriptures said that Israel is a people and not a nation. And that Israel would be scattered throughout the world.

He shall cause them that come of Jacob to take root:
Israel shall blossom and bud, and fill the face of the
world with fruit. (Isaiah 27:6)

There are many areas in which I would need to show a lot of scriptures to get the one point across. That is that Israel cannot fill the face of the world with fruit if they are just some tiny nation in the middle east. Anyway, I thought that I was going to stay there. I quit my job, and said my goodbyes to my daughter and granddaughters. As my daughter was taking me to the Chicago airport, we stopped at a ATM so I could get the rest of my money off my card because I didn't figure it would work over there. I had most of it drained but I figured I would get the last \$360 off there. I had bought a one-way ticket, so when I was checking into the airport, the lady checking me in told me that I had to have a return ticket. I thought for sure that I wasn't coming back, so I bought a ticket coming back in three months.

As I got to Tele Viv, we were pulling up to the walkway, or boarding bridge. The Father told my conscience that I was not staying there. I said okay then, tell me how long I am going to be here. After I got through customs, I went outside, sat down, smoking cigarettes, wondering where I was going to stay. After a couple of hours, I went up by where the taxis were. I was asking one of the drivers of where he thought I should go. Then some lady come up, asking how much to a certain hostel in the Old City of David, which is in Jerusalem. The taxi driver said that would be a good place to go.

So, I went there and asked this woman if it was okay that I checked to see if I could stay in the same hostel as to where she was going. I did not want to make her feel like I was following her. So, I went in and asked them if they had a room for a week or so. They told me that they didn't and that I should check next door at the Petre Hostel. So, I went up there and asked if they had a room for a week

or so. They told me they could give me a room for six days. I asked how much that would be, and they told me that it would be \$360 in US currency. I immediately knew how long I was going to be there. I settled into room 34, and then went down to check out the town. There was a restaurant next door. I went in to get a cup of coffee. It so happened that the owners of this restaurant also did personal tours. It was a little pricy, but I thought this was great.

While on one of the days of touring, we went into some building giving tours to a bunch of other people. The tour guide I was with must have had some kind of pull or something because we just went around everybody, straight to the front of the line. Then as we were going down two flights of stairs, the second flight started after you landed on the platform to change directions. As I was turning to the right to go down the next flight, I put my hand on the corner wall to secure myself. I could tell by the feel of it, some woman had put her hand on my right hand. I knew what it was, but at that time, I was still under the impression of not to tell anyone of who I was.

Anyway, when we got to the front, the people putting on the show told me to touch something that supposedly Jesus had touched or something. I figured why not; I will play the game. Afterwards he asked me if I felt anything, laughing, I told him no, not a thing. Then on the day before I was to be going back, we went to a couple of sites. Some sky ride thing, in which when we got there, I refused to go. I am not scared of heights; I have been sky diving before. But something was just telling me not to go, so I didn't. Then we went to the Jordan river. The tour guides asked if I wanted to get baptized. I thought about it for a minute or two. I thought that I had been baptized with water and then I had been baptized with the Holy Ghost. I also remembered the day before when we went to some tourist thing close to the city. As we were approaching this place, I watched a dove land in the birch of the tree right in the area we were going. When we got there, and the host of the outdoor souvenir store told me I was a lucky man. I replied that there is no such thing as luck. By this time, I was already sure that everything happens for a reason. Whether it is good or bad. So, I told them no.

As I have told you all in previous books, I listen to the chapter the verse of the day is in and the following two chapters every day, twice. I am listening for my instructions for the day, or what He wants me to be thinking about that day. The next day, the verse of the day on Bible Gateway was as is.

Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform it until the day of Jesus Christ: (Philippians 1:6)

As soon as I seen it, I realized that I messed up by not getting baptized in the Jordan river.

Then cometh Jesus from Galilee to Jordan unto John, to be baptized of him. But John forbad him, saying, I have need to be baptized of thee, and comest thou to me? And Jesus answering said unto him, Suffer it to be so now: for thus it becometh us to fulfil all righteousness. Then he suffered him. And Jesus, when he was baptized, went up straightway out of the water: and, lo, the heavens were opened unto him, and he saw the Spirit of God descending like a dove, and lighting upon him: And lo a voice from heaven, saying, This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased. (Matthew 3:13-17)

But it was too late, my plane was leaving in the morning. I went back knowing that I needed to come over again. I wasn't sure where I was going to go to work when I got back because I quit my job without giving notice, I didn't figure they would take me back. Lo and behold, once I got back I had a voice mail. It was the same company that I had just quit, asking me if I was ready to come back to work for them. Needless to say, I went to work for them again. I told them right away that I needed to go back, but this time I wasn't quitting,

Long story short, it was six months later when I took a week off to go back over to Israel. When I got there, I told the same tour guide that I would give them the same amount, but the only thing I wanted was to be baptized in the Jordan river. I wish I would have done it the first time because there were many doves in the area, and I know one would have been above me when I came out of the water. But there were no doves there this time. But I knew the Father would not give up on me, I am still in the flesh. But one day I was sitting in the outside part of the restaurant, when a stranger walking by, with blondish hair and a beard, stopped and pointed at me and said, I want your blessings. He stood there for a minute staring at me, pointed at me again and said, I want your blessing. I didn't know how to react because I was still under the impression that I was not to tell anyone who I was.

Skipping all the way to June of 2019. I had just stopped in Memphis Tennessee, and gave a couple copies of the second books to a woman that I had talked about the Bible in the past. Her name is Lasaundra, shortly after leaving from there, she called me and said, David, hear what the spirit says to you, make thy name known, make thy name known, get the book done, or you are going to have to start over from the beginning. I argued with her, I asked how I was supposed to make my name known when no one would read the books?

Then after getting off the phone, I started to think about it, and it hit me. She said hear what the Spirit says to you. And she said get the book done or I was going to have to start over from the beginning. Because of what I know about reincarnation, I knew that was another seventy to eighty thousand years before I would have the opportunity to be with the Father. Needless to say, this was the book that I was supposed to tell everyone who I was. I didn't have to hide it anymore. Jesus Christ in the flesh is the name of the third book, and it was written, published and available by September of 2019.

Then just after the book was done, I went to a casino in Davenport Ia. I hadn't even received my free copies that came with the publishing package. I sat at the crisscross table game with a few other players. When the other players got up and left the table, the dealer asked

me what my name was, I told her David. She replied, oh because I am supposed to say Jesus is here. I thought this was it, I thought the Father was going to reveal me with the book we just published. I showed her the book available on Amazon, and told her who I was. I was no longer holding back. I had kept my mouth shut for over three years now and I truly thought this was it.

It was the middle of October when I was going through a really shady spot. Nobody was reading the books, I figured I was going to take a vacation and just get away from everything. I booked a trip to Maui Hawaii, for November 4th. About a week before my flight, my dispatcher said that he envied me, because he would like to go to Hawaii. Well just a few days before this, I felt the Father was telling me that I was not going down there for pleasure, He was sending me. I told my dispatcher this. Then on the day of the flight, I overslept a little. When I got to the airport in Moline, IL, and got through TSA, they were calling for me because my flight was about to leave.

When I got on the plane, I noticed that they did not have TVs like the planes that I flew to Israel in. I like to watch out the window or TV when I fly. It helps me keep my mind off of smoking. I figured it was only a two-hour flight to Denver where I was catching my connector flight. I figured I would go and smoke there. I only had a forty-minute layover there. I asked where I could go to smoke, and I was told that I would have to go all the way outside and come back through TSA. With only having a forty-minute layover, there was no way that I could do this. So, I just got on my connection going to Maui. They didn't have TVs either.

I figured this was going to be a long flight. They said I could watch TV on my phone if I downloaded the app. I started to download the app when the pilot came on the intercom and told us to put our phones in airplane mode or shut it off. Well, that idea just went out the window, so I figured I would just play solitaire on my phone. I didn't need the internet for that.

After a couple of hours of flying, I got bored with the solitaire, so I started to look out my window. I was amazed at how blue the Pacific Ocean is. Then I started to watch a bunch of clouds come together

and form what looked to be a city. It looked like a bunch of vertical rectangles of different sizes, all bunched together. It looked the same as when you're a couple miles outside of a big city, driving towards it. I even asked the couple next to me, if they thought that this looked like a city. They both said they could see it. I couldn't believe what I was seeing.

Then after watching this for a while, I started to notice these thin clouds spread out at a lower altitude. I could see little gaps between the clouds where I could see little bits and pieces of the ocean below us. It kind of looked like the foam you see floating on the ocean next to the shore. Then I started to see the same kind of clouds, what look to be just under the plane. Now I know that when we fly, we are flying between four and five hundred miles per hour, but when you're up in the air, it looks like everything is moving slow. It started to look like we were just above a huge title wave about to crash down on the city that was in the sky and the clouds that were at a lower altitude. I mean it really looked like this. I started looking on the monitor on the phone to make sure we were still flying at 32, 000 feet. Then I started to see clouds come together that formed something that looked like four or five ships lined up at some kind of peer or something. I could even see the smokestacks on these ships. Then I could see one of these ships that looked like it was trying to come up this, what looked like to be a tidal wave. The back side of it, looked like it was sinking.

There you have it, there is what I was being sent for. I have now seen the flood in which covers the earth. The Father had me introduce this in the third book that was just published.

Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved
like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover
the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants
thereof. (Jeremiah 46:8)

I knew right away that I was going to be writing another book. I was ecstatic, I called my daughter as soon as I got there. But yes, this flood covers the entire earth. The entire earth is spiritually Egypt.

Now without showing this, I strongly suggest you listen to the Bible so that you can hear what happened, or will happen to anyone that does not obey the words Moses. I will give you heads up, none of them make it out of Egypt. I spent close to five years allowing Moses to lead me out of Egypt. Then I was set free. The only way anyone will be set free, is doing as I have done.

This flood also serves another purpose. In the chapter, Let Us Make Man In Our Image, in the book, Jesus is here, we showed how this means that things are the way they are in heaven. I am not going to show that chapter here because it is over a hundred pages.

We showed you all of our mother spoke of in Revelation 17. This flood also surrounds the earth, just like a baby, when he or she is in their mother's womb. In the fourth book, we showed how I was talking to my son on the phone one day while driving. I was telling him how I seen this flood and that I knew that this also served as the water surrounding us. At that time, I was thinking that many of us were going to be born again in the next world. Yes, I was misinterpreting this at the time. But I was correct on this being the water in the womb of our mother.

I was driving with my headset on when I was telling my sone about this and telling him that I wasn't sure when her water was going to brake. Just as I was telling him that, I had a vision within my mind as I was driving. It did not obscure my vision, or make my driving unsafe in any way. But as telling him this, I seen myself sitting there in the airplane, watching all that form that I just told you about. I remember this vision very well. As I was talking, I told my son to hold on, I would say it took about thirty seconds or so, but I knew that this was the Father telling me that I broke the water when I saw the flood from above.

Now we need to back up a little. In the third book, our Father had me write something in the introduction of the book. He had me say that we need to put our guard down, humble ourselves because this is going to be a very devastating time for the whole world. That book was published for the first time in September of 2019. I got back from Hawaii on November 13th of 2019. November 17th, is when someone

from China, made a YouTube video stating that they were fighting virus unknown to man. Then what happened in the spring of 2020? The entire world was hit with this virus. Then the economic turmoil went on throughout the world. Then the killing of George Floyd happened, and riots broke out throughout the world.

Now I have been hearing a little about another virus that might be starting up. I am not sure if it is true or not, but if it does, it will just be another contraction. There have been other contractions and labor pains going on since this all started back in 2019. Since then, I have come to realize the area in which I thought many were going to be born at once, is going to be when our Father reveals me.

Verily, verily, I say unto you, That ye shall weep and lament, but the world shall rejoice: and ye shall be sorrowful, but your sorrow shall be turned into joy. A woman when she is in travail hath sorrow, because her hour is come: but as soon as she is delivered of the child, she remembereth no more the anguish, for joy that a man is born into the world. (John 16:20-21)

The Son of man must suffer many things and be rejected of this generation first. I am paraphrasing and not showing this. When the day comes that He reveals me, I do believe is when the Father will make me the first born. That is when this world will rejoice that I am here. This is when the dead in Christ will rise. But there is a lot more that will be happening, and we will be covering that in the chapter of The Powers Of Heaven Shall Be Shaken.

Now I want to talk about something else that I didn't understand completely, until a few weeks ago or so. I saw the flood; I knew that our mother's water broke when I saw the flood from 32,000 feet. But I didn't understand how this worked.

(As it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb shall be called holy to the Lord;) (Luke 2:23)

When we first listen to this, it sounds as if every male that is born shall be called holy. But the scriptures teach that many are not holy, so how could this be? Well, when I saw this flood from above, I parted the womb. That is how our mother's water broke.

Now as I am writing the fourth book, Jesus is here, I remembered that the woman in the Casino had told me how she was supposed to say Jesus is here. I started thinking that maybe I had given the third book the wrong title. I even started thinking that maybe this is why nobody was reading the third. So, I wound up putting the third book inside the fourth. Now when I went to publish the fourth book, the publisher I had been using told me that they would not publish this one. I am not sure why, maybe it had something to do with the timing of the books with the Father. So, I called a different publishing company, they took one look at it and said they would be glad to publish. The only difference was that it took nine months to publish once I sent in the manuscript. Jesus is here was not published until December of 2020. That is why I think I was getting ahead of the Father's schedule as I normally do.

Now I am wanting to say that I had just taken a couple days off in Florida. Almost as soon as I started driving that day, it was like I could see spiritual pieces of thread behind very vehicle on the road. That is what prompted me to write the fifth book. I have been showing you all since the second book, that we are reigning with Christ, or that everyone is part of the One Son of God. This is when I started showing that we are living in the Sabbath day now.. That is why we are told that Jesus is Lord of the Sabbath day.

At that time Jesus went on the sabbath day through the corn; and his disciples were an hungred, and began to pluck the ears of corn and to eat. But when the Pharisees saw it, they said unto him, Behold, thy disciples do that which is not lawful to do upon the sabbath day. But he said unto them, Have ye not read what David did, when he was an hungred, and they that were with him; How he entered into the house of

God, and did eat the shewbread, which was not lawful for him to eat, neither for them which were with him, but only for the priests? Or have ye not read in the law, how that on the sabbath days the priests in the temple profane the sabbath, and are blameless? But I say unto you, That in this place is one greater than the temple. But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath day. (Matthew 12:1-8)

This is where we realize that the dominion that they have over us, is the dominion in which builds anything and everything. When we drive, we sew together the things in which were commanded in the Old Testament. Everybody has their own different laws, rules, judgments, testimonies, ordinances, and commandments. The second book, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here, in the chapter The Son Of God, gives a better understanding of this.

Now concerning spiritual gifts, brethren, I would not have you ignorant. Ye know that ye were Gentiles, carried away unto these dumb idols, even as ye were led. Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. Now there are diversities of gifts, but the same Spirit. And there are differences of administrations, but the same Lord. And there are diversities of operations, but it is the same God which worketh all in all. But the manifestation of the Spirit is given to every man to profit withal. For to one is given by the Spirit the word of wisdom; to another the word of knowledge by the same Spirit; To another faith by the same Spirit; to another the gifts of healing by the same Spirit; To another the working of miracles; to

another prophecy; to another discerning of spirits; to another divers kinds of tongues; to another the interpretation of tongues: But all these worketh that one and the selfsame Spirit, dividing to every man severally as he will. For as the body is one, and hath many members, and all the members of that one body, being many, are one body: so also is Christ. For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether we be Jews or Gentiles, whether we be bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit. For the body is not one member, but many. If the foot shall say, Because I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? And if the ear shall say, Because I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body? If the whole body were an eye, where were the hearing? If the whole were hearing, where were the smelling? But now hath God set the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleased him. And if they were all one member, where were the body? But now are they many members, yet but one body. And the eye cannot say unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you. Nay, much more those members of the body, which seem to be more feeble, are necessary: And those members of the body, which we think to be less honourable, upon these we bestow more abundant honour; and our uncomely parts have more abundant comeliness. For our comely parts have no need: but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that part which lacked. That there should be no schism in the body; but that the members should have the same care one for another. And whether one member suffer, all the members suffer with it; or one member be honoured,

PRECEPT SEVEN

all the members rejoice with it. Now ye are the body of Christ, and members in particular. And God hath set some in the church, first apostles, secondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diversities of tongues. Are all apostles? are all prophets? are all teachers? are all workers of miracles? Have all the gifts of healing? do all speak with tongues? do all interpret? But covet earnestly the best gifts: and yet shew I unto you a more excellent way. (1 Corinthians 12:1-31)

That is how everything is coming together as it is. I am going to use my career as an example so that you all can see how all are part of the body. I drive a semi across country in the United States. I haul food in a refrigerated trailer. Yes, this food is important for thousands to eat. But I couldn't do my job if someone wouldn't have built this truck and trailer. Certain parts come from different countries. Then all those people that built the truck and trailer had to have a place built for them to live. Someone had to build their form of transportation to and from work.

Then I couldn't drive across the country if someone hadn't built the roads and signs. Then someone had to build all the equipment to build the roads and their place of dwelling and transportation. I wouldn't be able to deliver the food if someone hadn't built the warehouses, forklifts, and all their place of dwelling and transportation. Then all of these people had to be taught to do what they do by someone. As shown in previous books, this is just a quick rundown to show how we need everybody in the body and everybody in the body needs us.

Every interaction we have with anyone, whether it be by talking to someone, driving by someone, or working around someone, we are planting seeds. This is when we need to be thinking of our actions because the seed we plant will grow.

We named the fifth book; *At Midnight I will rise*. This is because the Sabbath day ends at midnight. We do know what hour midnight in our Father's timeline is. But as we showed in the chapter, *Let us*

make man in our image, in the fourth book, the reason we have days here on earth is because we it is being done here on earth as it is in heaven.

At midnight I will rise to give thanks unto thee
because of thy righteous judgments. (Psalm 119:62)

This is the book that the Father showed me how to explain that the entire planet is waking dead even though the heart is pumping blood and your breathing, you are walking dead. That is how the dead bury the dead.

Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but
go thou and preach the kingdom of God. (Luke 9:60)

By the time this book was written, I had started to want to give up. I had thought certain things should have been happening quicker than they were. I was getting tired of not being revealed. It had been to the point that when the Father told me to make my name known, I was saying He was going to reveal me or He was going to have to find someone else.

On top of all that, I was writing this book when the incident happened in May of 2022. At that time, I started to think that the Father was giving up on me also. But He provided me a place to stay, get a job, and get myself back into shape. And on this book, we went back to the original publisher that we had used for the first three books. And that manuscript was sent the night before the Father sent me to my next employer.

Declaring the end from the Beginning was the sixth book. He got me to write this one even though I had been telling you all in the last few books, that I was not going to write anymore. But I think He did it this way because I truly was ready to quit and just die. Then I had been working for this new company for about four months, when I got a call from Livia. She wanted to know if would like to have *At Midnight I Will Rise*, promoted in a magazine that was going to be

presented in the London book fair. Once again, I started to get excited because nobody had ever called me on any of my previous books.

Then she asked me if I wanted to do an interview with Ric Britton. I am still in shock and all because someone had actually called me, thinking this might be it. Yes, this was me getting ahead of the Father's schedule as usual. Then she asked me if I had a website, I told her that I had one. Jesuschristintheflesh.com. She looked this website over and asked if I wanted them to build me one that looks more professional. And she said that this website would promote all the books. Yes, of course, let's do it. All I told her was that I wanted the frame to midnight blue, the body to be sky blue, a place to make blogs, and a place to put videos.

Then a few weeks later, the website was built. I about fell off my seat when I saw it. All the books that we had published were on top floating in the clouds. I immediately remembered how the world would see me coming in the clouds. davidofpsalm89.com

Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen. (Revelation 1:7)

And then shall appear the sign of the Son of man in heaven: and then shall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they shall see the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory. (Matthew 24:30)

Just about the same time the website was done, Livia told me that she had a dream about making a spot for another book on the website. By this time, Livia and I had been talking quite a bit on the phone. And with all the things we had talked about, I am certain that I never told her about what dreams are. At least not before she mentioned this dream.

For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction, That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword. He is chastened also with pain upon his bed, and the multitude of his bones with strong pain: So that his life abhorreth bread, and his soul dainty meat. (Job 33:14-20)

It still took a while, but it finally sunk in, the Father was telling me to write another book, through her. She had also asked if I wanted to have the other books republished. I even had another publishing company call me and ask if I wanted to get any of the books republished. My first thoughts were no way. I was not going to change the books, I still knew that it was the Father that told me to write them, and it was Him that told me what to call each of the books. Why would I get them republished?

So, as I am writing the book, the Father started to show me that when I came to this company, He put me in a blue and white truck. Then He reminded me of how He had me buy all blue and white clothes. Then He showed me that because my mind is always meditating on the scriptures, with the scriptures being a level of heaven, I am sitting on His right side in the heavenly places.

Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, (Ephesians 1:20)

Everything about me has me in blue and white, just as you see when you look up in the heavens on a clear day. Then I had to rethink the incident that happened in May of 2022. He was showing me that it was Him that caused me to let my health go so that I would pass

out and get fired from the previous company. Because at that time, I thought I was supposed to stay with them until He revealed me.

And because I do not go to doctors, it was Him that told my conscience what supplements to take and what jobs to get so that I could get recertified to drive again. Then just about the time I was done writing the sixth book, He told me to republish the other books. At first, I was telling Him no because I wasn't changing what He had me write, and under no circumstances was I going to fix any errors that I have made along the way. I am not perfect yet, and I do not want readers to be intimidated. Then He told me to just leave everything the same, including the covers, but now I needed to call each book a different precept, starting with the first book being precept one and so on. So, I had Ulink republish the exact books with the added precept on the cover, and a precept page in the front of each, explaining why we republished. The Father has been teaching me precept upon precept, line upon line, little here and a little there.

Whom shall he teach knowledge? and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk, and drawn from the breasts. For precept must be upon precept, precept upon precept; line upon line, line upon line; here a little, and there a little: (Isiah 28:9-10)

I just knew He was telling me that if you all want to understand all of this that way that I do, you will have to read each precept, starting with the first. This is the way I had to learn, so with being an example, the readers will have to do the same. The only difference is that these books knit together the engrafted word for the readers.

Then about the time that the sixth book was available, the group in Gaza attacked Israel.. As soon as I heard about it on the 7th of October, the Father took my conscience to this.

And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with
armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.
(Luke 21:20)

Don't get me wrong, I had to google where does the Bible say when you see Jerusalem surrounded by armies. I have listened to the Bible so many times and I am always meditating on the scriptures, but any either way, I don't always remember where certain things are, I just know that these things are in the Bible.

It was about a month after this happened, when I was making a YouTube Video on my channel, THEJENKS1000, and our Father taught me a lesson in real time. The name of the video is called Rapture warning, the purpose of me making this video had nothing to do with what He taught in this video. IF you get the chance, watch this video and you will see me being taught a lesson in real time.

I have watched this video a couple three times myself because this is the first time the Father has taught me something while I was making a video. The lesson came in at one hour and eleven minutes. Remember how I told you all in the last book, pay attention to the numbers. When looking at the time slide on the video, it reads 1:11. I am not going to show this lesson here because we are going to be doing an entire chapter on this lesson shortly.

But when this happened, I knew that there was another book coming. Yes, that is this one, but we are now getting to the most exciting reason of this chapter now, well at least for me. When I started this chapter, the Farther started pouring knowledge in my mind and I started to get excited. The more that He started connecting things in my mind, the more I got excited. So, to explain this, I need to tell you all how this all went down. And I want you to remember that I do nothing on my own.

I can of mine own self do nothing: as I hear, I judge:
and my judgment is just; because I seek not mine own
will, but the will of the Father which hath sent me.
(John 5:30)

It was getting to be the later part of November when I started to feel that I wanted to go to Alaska. I knew what the name of the seventh book was going to be, so I figured that He wanted me to get some pictures of the Northern Lights for the cover. To me, that made a lot of sense because it just seems to go along with the theme of the next book, and fits right in with the covers of all the previous books.

So, I book a trip up there for December 11 through the 20th of 2023. I paid for my flight and motel. Then I spent a few days reviewing tours that I could take while I was up there. I booked a few for myself and then flew up there on the 11th. As I am sitting on the plane in Salt Lake City, UT., before they told us to shut off our phones, I get a call from my brother in Missouri. This to me was odd, he blocked me on the phone over six months ago because he gets tired of my knowledge of the Bible and our Father.

Anyway, he had called to ask me a question about sliding the trailer tandems. Then I told him that I was getting ready to take off for Alaska. He told me that I should take him with me. He stated that being in the cold weather would be nice. I do know that he gets overheated easily. Kinda late now, we are getting ready to depart, is what I told him. Then on the short flight to Seattle, WA. to catch my connection, I started asking the Father why He had my Steve call. The more I thought about it, I started to realize that I needed to fly Steve up to Alaska. As I have told you all in previous books, when I feel the Father is giving me a direct commandment, I do not hesitate, I just do it, regardless.

So, when we got to Seattle, I called Steve to ask him if he wanted me to buy him a ticket up there. Needless to say, he said yes. He is on disability and there would be no other way for him to be able to afford the trip. So, I bought him a ticket and flew him up there. As I told you all in the beginning of this chapter, one of the first things he brought up, is the new heaven, and new earth talked about in the book of Revelation.

And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there

was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, new Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband. And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle of God is with men, and he will dwell with them, and they shall be his people, and God himself shall be with them, and be their God. And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away. And he that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And he said unto me, Write: for these words are true and faithful. (Revelation 21:1-5)

When he first asked me this, I wasn't sure of how to explain this other than there will not be a physical new heaven and earth. Then I started writing this chapter and oh boy, our Father started to pour in the knowledge.

I can see this new heaven. When He had me show you all in the last book, the scriptures are heaven. In fact, I have been telling you all since the second book, when you read or listen to the King James Version of the Bible, you are elevating to a level of heaven. And because of me listening to the Bible so many times, my mind is always thinking about the scriptures. I am in a new heaven, and I am going to stay here, even though I am here on earth.

Then the Father started reminding me about how I listen to Him all the time and not man. He reminded me of this obedience that I have been learning for quite some time now. Then He reminded me of how it was when I tried to commit suicide. Then He asked me of how it was when I was trying to stay with my wife. Then He asked me, is anything the same as it was then? Obviously, nothing is the same as it was then.

Did you hear how He said I make all things new? This is the new earth for me. Nothing is the same, all things for me are new.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature: old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new. (2 Corinthians 5:17)

Every step I take, He is holding my hand. Every time I blink my eyes, I am looking at what He needs me to be seeing at that precise moment. He is walking me through life, I have absolutely nothing to fear, but Him of course. He has truly made all things new for me.

I had been eating of the spiritual meat and drink for years. As we have shown in previous books, water, milk, honey, wine, meat, and my flesh, are all levels of knowledge.

Moreover, brethren, I would not that ye should be ignorant, how that all our fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea; And were all baptized unto Moses in the cloud and in the sea; And did all eat the same spiritual meat; And did all drink the same spiritual drink: for they drank of that spiritual Rock that followed them: and that Rock was Christ. But with many of them God was not well pleased: for they were overthrown in the wilderness. Now these things were our examples, to the intent we should not lust after evil things, as they also lusted. Neither be ye idolaters, as were some of them; as it is written, The people sat down to eat and drink, and rose up to play. Neither let us commit fornication, as some of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thousand. Neither let us tempt Christ, as some of them also tempted, and were destroyed of serpents. Neither murmur ye, as some of them also murmured, and were destroyed of the destroyer. Now all these things happened unto them for examples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come. Wherefore let him

that thinketh he standeth take heed lest he fall. (1
Corinthians 10:1-12)

Did you hear how all are fathers were under the cloud, and all passed through the sea? That is the same sea that I had seen that covers the earth from 32,000 feet. That spiritual Rock in which they drank from, was the knowledge of understanding that everybody is part of the One Son of God, or everybody is Christ.

I got excited and called my brother, I wanted to tell him how the Father has me living in the new heaven and the new earth. It was and is not what he was expecting, and I could tell by the tone in his voice, he was getting annoyed.

But then he started talking about how he just doesn't have any energy and has been having bad thoughts ever since we got back from Alaska. He stated that maybe the doctors needed to put him on stronger medication. As soon as he said that it hit my conscience.

Thus saith the Lord; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the Lord. For he shall be like the heath in the desert, and shall not see when good cometh; but shall inhabit the parched places in the wilderness, in a salt land and not inhabited. (Jeremiah 17:5-6)

Then I remembered how Steve had been telling me for years, that he wanted to see something happen with me so that he would believe that the Father is truly doing something with me. Well, this is where I tell you all of three things that happened, that he saw. First and foremost, I told you all that I booked some touring trips for myself. At the time that I booked them, I was the only one that was going to be there.

But when Steve got there, I had to book him on the same trips. Well, I booked him to go with on the Wednesday and Friday. Then I had another one on Saturday, but I told Steve that I thought that I was going to cancel that one. We will get to Thursday in a few minutes.

Then they sent me a message on Friday afternoon informing me that it was going to be cloudy the day of the scheduled trip, so they were wanting to know if I would like to reschedule. They suggested that I go that night, Friday, or Sunday the 17th.

So, I talked to my brother and told him that I was just going to cancel because of how they wanted to reschedule. I called them up and started to talk about cancelling, and then the woman on the other end of the phone said she had me booked for two people. I asked how could that be? I booked this trip for myself. She insisted that I had booked it for two people. When she said that for the second time, I knew the Father was telling me that I needed to go on this particular trip.

I told her that I wanted to reschedule for the 17th, but you need to look at the original booking because I know that I am the only one scheduled. She looked at it and told me that I was right. So, I booked it for the both of us. Then I proceeded to tell Steve, with her insisting that the trip was booked for two people, when I knew that was impossible, that was the Father telling me that He wanted me on this trip.

Then Sunday evening came around and we went on the tour to see the Northern Lights. When the tour guides got to the spot that they thought would be a good spot, they set up a little campfire and such. Some of the people on the tour went out on the frozen lake and had some photos taken with the Northern Lights right away. I wasn't that thrilled with what I was seeing. I was thinking to myself that I had seen better than that the first night I went out.

Then I got the chance to talk to the owner of the company that was doing the tour. I told him that there was going to be a good show tonight. I told him that I felt our heavenly Father was telling me that I needed to be on this trip because this is where I will get the shot for the cover. The owner of the company was also a professional photographer. When we took pictures on the other tours, they were done with our phones. Without a flash, none of the pictures showed me with the lights.

Then they had some reindeer sausages that were precooked. They provided coffee and hot chocolate. They provided everything we needed as we were sitting around the fire. All we had to do was heat the sausages up and enjoy. Yes, reindeer is a clean beast which we can eat. Whenever I eat something out of the ordinary, I check to make sure I am not disobeying the Father.

Then I started seeing something happening in the sky. I went over to the owner and asked him if he would take some photos of me with what was starting to happen. Even though it was well below zero outside, I took my coat and gloves off. I just knew this is where we were going to get the shot. Then everybody else on the tour got their pictures taken. Needless to say, one of those shots is the front cover of this book.

Then the owner of the company came up to me and said, you were right, we did get a good show tonight. Then on the way back, the tour guide that was driving the van proceeded to tell everybody on the tour that they only got shows like less than five percent of the trips out. It was something like one trip out of every twenty trips out.

Now I told you all that we would be talking about Thursday in a minute, here we go. We didn't have anything booked for Thursday so we thought that maybe we would take the rental car up towards where I had gone on Tuesday night. I went on a tour that took me across the Artic Circle.

Now let me tell you about this tour. We got across the Artic Circle, when the tour guide said that there was some lights in the sky. I looked at them, it didn't look like lights to me, it looked like thin clouds. So, I just walked around as others took pictures of the sign and what looked to be thin clouds to me. Then when we got back in the van, she said she needed to mention something. She said, your camera can see things in the sky that you cannot see with the naked eye. And your naked eye cannot see what your camera can catch in the sky.

I didn't give it that much thought at the moment. So, as we were driving back to Fairbanks, we made another stop that had a little more movement in the sky. At first, I had the same impression, and as they were taking pictures, I thought to myself, I may well take a picture

and see what she was talking about. I put my camera on night mode as she instructed us to do, I took a couple shots of what looked to be something like clouds, and then looked at what I just took pictures of. My jaw dropped; I couldn't believe what I just saw. Now I was convinced, I knew what to look for. Remember, I was on this trip to get a photo for the cover. Then as we were heading back after that stop, she said we got to stop, this is getting ready to pop. She found a pullout area, an area widened on the side of the road to stop out of the way of traffic. She couldn't stop fast enough, I had her take a few pictures of me, but all you could see is what looked to be me being some kind of shadow. But the lights in the sky were beautiful.

This all took place when Steve was on his flight up. I told him about what I had seen, so he wanted to go there also. Well now this tour, was booked up until the end of December, so there was no way. So, that is why we decided to go to the Artic Circle. On the way up, we stopped at this little truck stop with a restaurant and had some dinner. When we got done and were walking outside, I had a random thought that we should not go any further north. We were still about sixty miles away from the circle. We walked outside, I immediately focused on a semi that was getting fuel. The truck number was 733. Then I noticed a license plate on another vehicle that had some letters and then 137 on it. I told Steve that the Father was telling me not to go further north.

I asked him what he wanted to do. He said screw it, we are this close, we are going all the way. He told me to drive, naturally, with all of my semi driving experience, I thought it would be fine. As we got closer, it started snowing and the wind was blowing. We got to the circle, he got some pictures of the sign, and then we headed back towards Fairbanks. As we were going up the mountain, called Beavers Slide, the snow was blowing into us. I started slowing down, and without realizing it, I became hypnotized by the snow. I lost my bearing so to speak. I could have sworn that we were sliding forward in a downward motion. I kept looking at what looked to be some kind of banner or something out in the field to our left. It looked like it was getting closer. Steve said that we weren't moving. He finally convinced

me to put the car in park, and even though it was in park, I thought we were still sliding down the mountain. There was a time that he said that we were sliding backwards. I couldn't move, I was just sure I was going to put the car off the side of the mountain.

Steve finally convinced me that we were not moving. Then he said that he needed to drive. I agreed. I admit, I was not totally convinced that we were not moving until I opened the door and seen the still concrete below the car. After we got going, we got to about the same area where I had seen the Northern Light on the third stop on the tour that I took by myself. We stopped the car and took some shots, but that same thing, I looked more like a shadow of me then me. Then after all was said and done, I reminded Steve on how I told Him that the Father was telling me that we shouldn't have gone any further north. And as usual, the Father was correct. I froze behind the wheel, the picture we took were south of where the Father told me this, so in retrospect, we should have just stayed where we were and waited until the light show began.

That was the second thing that my brother saw. I can't say that he saw the thing with the owner of the tour company because Steve was out wondering around when the conversation with the owner of the company took place.

Now the third thing that Steve witnessed was after we had gotten back from the trip. His flight took him to Missouri, but mine took me to Salt Lake City UT. Both flights left at different times, but we both had to catch are connecting in Seattle, WA. We wound up meeting in Seattle. His flight left after mine, so he told me the day after, that he had gotten a beer while he was waiting. He did not tell me of the price.

I was talking to someone, I cannot remember who, but we were talking about how expensive things were in Alaska and such. I was telling her about the problems with the flights coming back and mentioned that my brother paid nine dollars for one beer at the airport. The next day, I was telling Steve about this conversation, and I told him that I told her that you paid nine dollars for the beer. Then I asked him how much did you pay for that beer? He replied, nine dollars. I just started laughing because he hadn't told me how much

he paid for that beer, but I knew how much anyway. No, I didn't even get close to any bars before, during, or after this trip.

Now we need to back up to when my brother was telling me that he was having a hard time getting motivated on anything and that his mood is bad, ever since the trip. He had told me that if he could see something happen to me, that he would believe that the Father was truly doing something with me. When we were talking on this day, I reminded him of the three things that he did see. He told me that he wanted to see something bigger. My thought was, if you want a steak for dinner, you don't get the whole cow.

Now I am not no medical doctor, and by no means, am I giving medical advice. But I have shown you all in previous books, when someone feels depressed, anger, sad, or any way other than perfect, there is a good chance that you are being chastised by our Father. He is putting it on your conscience, that you need to be doing things differently.

Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us, Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; who for the joy that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God. For consider him that endured such contradiction of sinners against himself, lest ye be wearied and faint in your minds. Ye have not yet resisted unto blood, striving against sin. And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him: For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth, and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth. If ye endure chastening, God dealeth with you as with sons; for what son is he whom the father

chasteneth not? But if ye be without chastisement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye bastards, and not sons. (Hebrews 12:1-8)

Then as we were talking, Steve mentioned something about how he wanted to be in the garden of Eden. Then he hung up on me. I asked the Father what that was all about. Then the Father started asking me questions. He asked, does your brother obey me? I replied, no. Then He asked me, does your brother eat the unclean things? I replied, yes. Then He asked me, does your brother honor me? I replied, no. Then He asked me if my brother celebrates the days in which I never commanded? This one was a little tricky because Steve spent years as a Jehovah's Witness, and they don't do the birthdays and holidays. But it is for different reasons other than just listening to every word that proceedeth our of the mouth of God. And hearing what He did not say. But then Steve does wish his children happy birthday, and he will tell people merry christmas and such, he just doesn't do all the hype that comes with it. So, I replied, yes he does.

So, I started asking the Father if this would make my brother a hypocrite. He wants to be in the garden of Eden, but he does not want to listen to you. Then the Father asked me, why did I kick Adam and Eve out of the garden? My reply was because they didn't listen to you. They chose to listen to the serpent instead.

Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing

good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden. And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not

eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living. Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them. And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. (Genesis 3:1-24)

A little side note here, there is a chapter in the second book, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here, called The Garden of Eden. In this chapter, we show how God placed fire all around the garden, and that if we want to get back into it, we must walk through this spiritual fire.

Then He told me to start thinking about how I refuse to listen to man. How I do live by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God. Then He told me to think of how I will not eat of the unclean things, regardless of the feelings of others now. It is about honoring the Father and He comes first, and foremost before anyone else. Then He told me to think about how I hate that man celebrates the days in which He never commanded. Then He told me to think about how I love Him first and foremost. And then He told me to think about how I do unto others as I would have them do unto me. Then He asked me what I wear on my neck and wrist, and is noted

on my D. O. T physical, which is documented on my driver's license. Of course, Father, do not resuscitate, was my reply. My life is in your hands and not man's. Then He asked me what the two greatest commandments are.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36-40)

Then He told me to think about how I seek Him with all of my heart, soul, mind, and strength. Even though there are days I throw my temper tantrums, I still love and seek His perfection in everything that I do. Then He asked why I do all that I do. I told Him because I truly fear you, and I know that you have the power to make my life pleasant, or miserable. Then He asked the big question, where are you at David? Oh my gosh, I am in the Garden Of Eden. It is not a physical garden, but a spiritual garden.

There is the new heaven and earth. So, I called Cathy to tell her of this newfound knowledge that our Father just showed me, I was and am so excited. As I was talking with her, I told her that the Father had reminded me that I should be listening to the Bible more because I now know that this is the new heaven. And then it just came out of my mouth, when I do not listen to the Bible as I am driving, my mood gets to be foul. I told her that the troubles of hell surround me.

Now I need to mention something here that will throw us off a little, but we will get right back. I know it was during the time of writing the 6th book that my phone quit working. So, I had to get a new one. When I did this, I got an upgrade on my data which allows me to have a lot more high-speed data. Well, when I did this, I let myself think that I could listen to videos on YouTube. I would listen

to videos that would keep me up to date on current events. I don't do mainstream media anymore because they never seem to be telling the whole story. But on these videos, they do their homework and did into the truth. I consider these people that make these videos to be what the Bible calls watchers. Then the Father reminded me of something.

His watchmen are blind: they are all ignorant, they are all dumb dogs, they cannot bark; sleeping, lying down, loving to slumber. Yea, they are greedy dogs which can never have enough, and they are shepherds that cannot understand: they all look to their own way, every one for his gain, from his quarter.
(Isaiah 56:10-11)

I started to realize that the watchers would just be making videos that said the same thing over and over. It was like out of a sixty-minute video, there would be maybe five minutes of valuable information. Then I realized that these people make a lot of money making these videos. I realized that they are not making the videos because that care about others. They are doing them to make money, be recognized, and or because they are paranoid of what is to come upon the earth.

Now back to me telling Cather that my mood gets foul. I brought this up here because I was using this as an excuse as to why I wouldn't listen to the Bible. I would tell myself that I needed to stay up on current events. Then I started to think about the scriptures saying that the troubles of hell compass me. I had to look up what I was thinking about.

The sorrows of death compassed me, and the pains of hell gat hold upon me: I found trouble and sorrow.
(Psalm 116:3)

Then it started to make since, when I don't listen to the Bible as I am driving, I am allowing the pains of hell to surround me. I am spending

less time in heaven, the scriptures, and more time in hell. When I am listening to the Bible, I am hearing conversation being held in heaven.

For our conversation is in heaven; from whence
also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ:
(Philippians 3:20)

And because I know that it is actually the Father that told the holy men what to write, I am hearing the Fathers words, and His only. But when I am choosing to not listen to the Bible, I am descending into the lower parts of hell, and allowing the pains of hell get a hold of me.

(Now that he ascended, what is it but that he also
descended first into the lower parts of the earth?
(Ephesians 4:9)

This explains why there were days that I would email Livia and tell her that I quit. I knew that I wasn't going to quit, but my mood was foul, and I was just easily irritated. This is day five since the Father has brought this to my attention. Since He brought this to my attention, despite all the bad weather and breakdowns I have been having since, I have listened to over 19 CD's of the Bible. I am not listening to it when I am working on the book, but I am listening to it all the time again, as I drive. Well, I had to quit writing so that I could deliver my load, I am on CD 24 now, same day. Just as it was when I use to listen all the time, it will take less than three weeks to get through it one time, and then I will start over.

Earlier in the book, I told you all that I do not listen to the Bible much anymore. I let myself believe that because I am thinking of the scriptures all the time, I am fine. I was wrong and I have been telling everyone that I talk to on a regular basis, that there will be less calling between us now because I know now that the more time I spend not listening to the Bible, the more time I am descending down into hell. And to put it frankly, I like being in heaven a lot more, so I will be spending a lot more of my time there instead of hell.

I had to talk to Livia now and explain all of this, oh boy our Father has floored me with all of this newfound knowledge. But I was waiting until she called me because I will be spending my time in heaven any chance I get. But I knew that I needed to apologize and ask for forgiveness for the dark conversations that I had with her. Now I knew and know what they were all about.

Now I have told you all that I have listened to the Bible well more than fifty times, I will guarantee that I will listen to it at least twenty times this year alone. I only listened to it four- or five-times last year, for me, that is like not listening to it all for me. Now I understand the power of my resurrection.

But what things were gain to me, those I counted loss for Christ. Yea doubtless, and I count all things but loss for the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus my Lord: for whom I have suffered the loss of all things, and do count them but dung, that I may win Christ, And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith: That I may know him, and the power of his resurrection, and the fellowship of his sufferings, being made conformable unto his death; If by any means I might attain unto the resurrection of the dead. (Philippians 3:7-11)

As we have been showing you all, the world is walking dead even though their heart is beating, your blood is flowing, and your breathing, your walking dead until you turn back to the Father and seek Him and His ways with all of your heart, soul, mind, and strength.

But if from thence thou shalt seek the Lord thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul. When thou art in tribulation,

PRECEPT SEVEN

and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the Lord thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice;(For the Lord thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he sware unto them. (Deuteronomy 4:29-31)

Now I have told you all that I do consider myself equal to God. No, I am not God the Father, but I do consider myself an equal because I truly seek Him and all that He is about for everything that I do.

Who, being in the form of God, thought it not robbery to be equal with God: But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men: And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross. Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name: (Philippians 2:6-9)

Now I utterly understand why it is not robbery to be equal with God. I seek Him and His ways all the time. And I allow myself to be chastised, I do not resist, seeking His ways to correct every step I take. When I start my day of driving, I tell Him that He is driving. Then I try to pay attention to what He is saying through other traffic. And I allow Him to correct me if I am doing something wrong. I am literally sitting on His right side of Him in the heavenly places, as shown in the last book, Declaring The End From The Beginning.

Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, (Ephesians 1:20)

Now I will say that this is not the end of all the things He started to show me in the last few days, but He is telling me that we will cover the other thing that He taught me in the next chapter.

Now I can truly say that I know how to explain how the scriptures show that I am from above and ye are from beneath.

And he said unto them, Ye are from beneath; I am from above: ye are of this world; I am not of this world. I said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins. Then said they unto him, Who art thou? And Jesus saith unto them, Even the same that I said unto you from the beginning. I have many things to say and to judge of you: but he that sent me is true; and I speak to the world those things which I have heard of him. They understood not that he spake to them of the Father. Then said Jesus unto them, When ye have lifted up the Son of man, then shall ye know that I am he, and that I do nothing of myself; but as my Father hath taught me, I speak these things. And he that sent me is with me: the Father hath not left me alone; for I do always those things that please him.
(John 8:23-29)

This is because I enjoy listening to scriptures. I have told you all in previous books that I get lost in the stories. It is almost like I forget about everything else. And I don't get tired of it even though I have listened to it well over fifty times. And I now know why I get so foul when I am not listening on a regular basis, other than, what I call the verse of the day wrap.

For those that do not know what I am talking about when I say the verse of the day wrap, I am going to explain this. Each day, as soon as I awake, I go to Bible Gateway to see what the verse of the day is. I then listen to that chapter and the following two chapters. I am listening for my daily instructions, or at minimum, what our Father

wants me to be thinking about for the day ahead of me. And yes, He said that I would do just that.

I have raised up one from the north, and he shall come: from the rising of the sun shall he call upon my name: and he shall come upon princes as upon mortar, and as the potter treadeth clay. (Isaiah 41:25)

Now back to the topic at hand.

But the tongue can no man tame; it is an unruly evil, full of deadly poison. Therewith bless we God, even the Father; and therewith curse we men, which are made after the similitude of God. Out of the same mouth proceedeth blessing and cursing. My brethren, these things ought not so to be. Doth a fountain send forth at the same place sweet water and bitter? Can the fig tree, my brethren, bear olive berries? either a vine, figs? so can no fountain both yield salt water and fresh. Who is a wise man and endued with knowledge among you? let him shew out of a good conversation his works with meekness of wisdom. But if ye have bitter envying and strife in your hearts, glory not, and lie not against the truth. This wisdom descendeth not from above, but is earthly, sensual, devilish. For where envying and strife is, there is confusion and every evil work. But the wisdom that is from above is first pure, then peaceable, gentle, and easy to be intreated, full of mercy and good fruits, without partiality, and without hypocrisy. And the fruit of righteousness is sown in peace of them that make peace. (James 3:8-18)

When I am not listening to the Bible, I am not seeking this wisdom that comes from above in which brings me peace. When I am not listening to the Bible I am hearing more swear words, or cursing.

Remember how I told you in an earlier chapter, that I hear a lot of swearing in the rock and roll that I have been listening to? Well, by me listening to the Bible regularly again, I will clean it up. It will keep my mind on Him and all that He is about.

Thou wilt keep him in perfect peace, whose mind is stayed on thee: because he trusteth in thee. Trust ye in the Lord for ever: for in the Lord Jehovah is everlasting strength: (Isaiah 26:3-4)

This entire lesson actually began when my brother called me while I was sitting on the plane getting ready to depart for Fairbanks, Alaska. I have tried to call my bother several times since all this has come in, but once again, he has me blocked. I know this is because my brother too, is a servant and or vessel of God, and this is what the Father had to do to get me going on this lesson. And oh my, what a lesson it is.

Now we need to listen to this again, but we are going to listen to a little more than just one verse.

O lord, thou hast searched me, and known me. Thou knowest my downsitting and mine uprising, thou understandest my thought afar off. Thou compassest my path and my lying down, and art acquainted with all my ways. For there is not a word in my tongue, but, lo, O Lord, thou knowest it altogether. Thou hast beset me behind and before, and laid thine hand upon me. Such knowledge is too wonderful for me; it is high, I cannot attain unto it. Whither shall I go from thy spirit? or whither shall I flee from thy presence? If I ascend up into heaven, thou art there: if I make my bed in hell, behold, thou art there. If I take the wings of the morning, and dwell in the uttermost parts of the sea; Even there shall thy hand lead me, and thy right hand shall hold me. If I say, Surely the darkness

PRECEPT SEVEN

shall cover me; even the night shall be light about me. Yea, the darkness hideth not from thee; but the night shineth as the day: the darkness and the light are both alike to thee. For thou hast possessed my reins: thou hast covered me in my mother's womb. I will praise thee; for I am fearfully and wonderfully made: marvellous are thy works; and that my soul knoweth right well. (Psalm 139:1-14)

You now know that knowing how to do as I have done is not too far away.

For this commandment which I command thee this day, it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. It is not in heaven, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? Neither is it beyond the sea, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go over the sea for us, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? But the word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest do it. See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil; In that I command thee this day to love the Lord thy God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments and his statutes and his judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the Lord thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to possess it. (Deuteronomy 30:11-16)

All you have to do is listen, and I mean truly listen to our Father and our Father only. And He will do the rest.

When I truly think about it, this lesson began a long time ago. When I think about how I do nothing on my own, I need to realize that it is our Father in which caused me to think that I didn't need to listen to the Bible as much. During this time, I was spending a lot

of time listening to XM radio. I would call Cathy almost daily to see how the grand babies were doing. I would listen to videos on YouTube thinking that I needed to keep up on current events. And because I was doing all of this and more, I was allowing the pains of hell get to me. It had gotten to the point that I was ready to die. I just wanted to give up and forget about everything that I knew and know. Since I started to do this chapter, I have listened to almost the entire Old Testament. I will be done with that by mid tomorrow, then onto the New Testament. And I will say, I already feel like I am floating above cloud nine again. Laughing, not a lesson I care to do again.

I need to add something here. I need to mention that all this time that I wouldn't listen to the Bible as much, and had descended down into hell as this chapter explains, nothing evil ever came about me. Yes, I had the incident back in May of 2022. As explained, that was the Father's way of forcing me to leave the company that I was with. But He provided me with everything that I needed. He caused me to save enough money before the incident so I would have enough to survive on during the time off the road. He led me to the jobs that I needed which required a lot of physical movement, which sped up the recovery time. He provided me a place to stay during this time. With this money that I had saved, I bought the Harley that I told you all about. That was my transportation to get to and from work. I didn't need to borrow a car. When I think about it, that is when I stopped listening to the Bible as much. So, I guess I had listened to the Bible something like five times in 18 months.

Now I need to mention a couple things about this Harley. I have recently convinced Cathy to sell it and use the for what ever she needs. I do not need it, nor do I want it. I am never around. So, she has told me that it is up for sale.

But here is a story that I want to share with you about this Harley. I was riding this bike to and from work. There was a day that I was riding to work, but it was raining extremely hard. I could hardly see through the visor on my helmet. I almost hit the curb and said I am going to wreck. I slowed down even more, for I wasn't doing no more than 20 mph. I had made a left turn on different road on the route to

work, when I started to go around a curve to the left. Then the next thing I know, I was sitting on the road watching the bike continue to go. It rolled about another 30 feet or so before it laid over. It has crash bars, so no damage happened to it. I had a sore behind and a little cut on my finger. No big deal, so I got up and got on the bike and went to work.

That night, I was telling everyone at the house of what happened. Just after I stated that I was watching the bike go on, my daughter busted our laughing. I asked what is so funny. Her words were, “it sounds like you got picked up off the bike and put on your butt”. I was like, you know that does kind of sound that way, doesn’t it? I thought about it more and more, and to this day, I do believe that is exactly what happened.

It was the Father inside of me, telling me that I was going to wreck. But because I was so determined not to miss work, I was going no matter what. So, when I started to go around that curve, I do believe that I was picked up off the bike and sat down on my butt. Why? Because that was the only way to keep me from getting into a wreck in which would have truly hurt me and or others. But because I was sat down on the road to watch my bike keep going, and then fall over. I took even more precautions getting to work, but I went to work and worked the full shift.

My point being, is even though I was starting this trip back down into hell, I was always protected. And that protection stayed the entire time, and is still there. He is truly there for you if you want Him to be. We have a couple more things we need to be talking about before we close this chapter.

Ye men of Israel, hear these words; Jesus of Nazareth, a man approved of God among you by miracles and wonders and signs, which God did by him in the midst of you, as ye yourselves also know: Him, being delivered by the determinate counsel and foreknowledge of God, ye have taken, and by wicked hands have crucified and slain: Whom God hath

raised up, having loosed the pains of death: because it was not possible that he should be holden of it. For David speaketh concerning him, I foresaw the Lord always before my face, for he is on my right hand, that I should not be moved: Therefore did my heart rejoice, and my tongue was glad; moreover also my flesh shall rest in hope: Because thou wilt not leave my soul in hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. Thou hast made known to me the ways of life; thou shalt make me full of joy with thy countenance. Men and brethren, let me freely speak unto you of the patriarch David, that he is both dead and buried, and his sepulchre is with us unto this day. Therefore being a prophet, and knowing that God had sworn with an oath to him, that of the fruit of his loins, according to the flesh, he would raise up Christ to sit on his throne; He seeing this before spake of the resurrection of Christ, that his soul was not left in hell, neither his flesh did see corruption. This Jesus hath God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses. Therefore being by the right hand of God exalted, and having received of the Father the promise of the Holy Ghost, he hath shed forth this, which ye now see and hear. For David is not ascended into the heavens: but he saith himself, The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, Until I make thy foes thy footstool. Therefore let all the house of Israel know assuredly, that God hath made the same Jesus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Christ. (Acts 2:22-36)

Okay this is wild, and yes, this is something that I am adding since I started listening to the Bible as it was before I descended down into hell. As we showed you all in the last book, I am sitting on the right hand of God in the heavenly places. If fact, I wrote the last book

while I was in hell. That is a testimony to show that I have not seen any corruption. Even though I was going through a really rough time, I never betrayed my Father, or stopped thinking of the scriptures. There will be a chapter later that will talk about that more. Now let us listen to another area that explains this better.

Men and brethren, children of the stock of Abraham, and whosoever among you feareth God, to you is the word of this salvation sent. For they that dwell at Jerusalem, and their rulers, because they knew him not, nor yet the voices of the prophets which are read every sabbath day, they have fulfilled them in condemning him. And though they found no cause of death in him, yet desired they Pilate that he should be slain. And when they had fulfilled all that was written of him, they took him down from the tree, and laid him in a sepulchre. But God raised him from the dead: And he was seen many days of them which came up with him from Galilee to Jerusalem, who are his witnesses unto the people. And we declare unto you glad tidings, how that the promise which was made unto the fathers, God hath fulfilled the same unto us their children, in that he hath raised up Jesus again; as it is also written in the second psalm, Thou art my Son, this day have I begotten thee. And as concerning that he raised him up from the dead, now no more to return to corruption, he said on this wise, I will give you the sure mercies of David. Wherefore he saith also in another psalm, Thou shalt not suffer thine Holy One to see corruption. For David, after he had served his own generation by the will of God, fell on sleep, and was laid unto his fathers, and saw corruption: But he, whom God raised again, saw no corruption. Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man is preached unto you

the forgiveness of sins: And by him all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses. Beware therefore, lest that come upon you, which is spoken of in the prophets; Behold, ye despisers, and wonder, and perish: for I work a work in your days, a work which ye shall in no wise believe, though a man declare it unto you. (Acts 13:26-41)

All right, we showed you all in the second book, we are symbolized as trees in the Bible. Let us listen to just one spot where we can hear this.

And he took the blind man by the hand, and led him out of the town; and when he had spit on his eyes, and put his hands upon him, he asked him if he saw ought. And he looked up, and said, I see men as trees, walking. After that he put his hands again upon his eyes, and made him look up: and he was restored, and saw every man clearly. (Mark 8:23-25)

If you want to learn more about this, I suggest reading Behold, a greater than Jonas is here. But when I tried to take my life in 2009, I was taken off the tree. I had gotten to the point that I truly did not want to live anymore. Then I got called to the Bible in 2011, and went through all the laws of Moses. Then in 2016 is when God raised me from the dead. I started listening to the Bible vigorously. I just could not get enough. When I got in the truck after the baptism of the Holy Ghost, I would listen through the entire Bible in three weeks. I did this for about four years or so. That should give you an idea of how many times I have listened to the Bible. And as we showed in the last book, the more time you spend listening to the Bible and or meditating on the scriptures, your elevating to a level of heaven. During this time, I was seen by many areas and Jerusalem.

Then in 2020, I slowed down to a little bit because I was keeping up with the news with the Covid-19 thing because that was shortly

after our mother's water broke, as shown in the fourth book, Jesus is here. But I still listened to it several times a year up until the incident in 2022.

That is the first time that I was raised from the dead. Then when this incident happened I pretty much stopped listening to the Bible all together. Unbeknownst to me until writing this chapter, which is when I started to descend back down into hell. Then once I started to listen to the Bible again, I ascended back into the heaven. Without ascending into the physical heaven just as we just heard. Notice how it tells us that David of the Old Testament is dead, in a sepulchre, and did see corruption. I have risen and did not see corruption.

I am thinking that when people here how Jesus is raised from the dead again, that it must be talking about when he returns.

But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead; Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification. (Romans 4:24-25)

Who is he that condemneth? It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us. (Romans 8:34)

But as we have been showing you all, I was never here before, or this world would not be here. And now you can understand how I have been risen from the dead, twice.

Now after learning all that we did in this lesson, it is truly up to you. You are the one that needs to decide, would you rather join me in the heavenly places, or do you prefer to continue in hell. Your choice, heaven, or hell.

The First Death

This chapter is going to be a continuation of the lesson we just went over in the last chapter. I was going to talk about this in the last chapter, but the Father said He wanted a separate chapter for this. In fact, He has brought it to my attention that He wants me to show you all how He told me to make a separate chapter for this. I think it is a clever idea so that you all can see and hear why I have been telling you all that He is the true author of the books. I am just the servant and or vessel that He is using to give you all an understanding of Him.

As I was telling you all in the chapter heaven or hell, there had been a time that I was not listening to the Bible as much as I had been. It was around the 13th of January of this year when I wrote the first three sentences of that chapter. It was just then, when the Father started to tell me what we were going to be doing with this chapter. I started getting excited, but at the same time needed some sleep so I could drive safely the next day. Then after a day of driving on the 14th, we got started on the chapter. By the time I had stopped writing that night, I was starting to understand that I was going through the rough times because I had not been listening to the Bible. As soon as I started driving the next day, I put the CDs in and started listening again, from the beginning.

After listening to two or three chapters my mood started to elevate for the good. By the days end, I was practically jumping out of my seat with joy. Then the next day, I emailed Livia and told her that she would no longer have to worry about the bad days anymore. I would not call her because I wasn't taking time away from the listening to the Bible. I figured I would wait for her to call me.

Then on the morning of Thursday, January 18th, she called to talk about some things we got going on with the books. By now, I had been listening to the Bible so much, that I had already listened to over forty CDs. I started to explain all this newfound knowledge that our Father had been teaching me and how much better I am feeling now that I am listening to the Bible again. Don't get me wrong, I didn't quit listening to the Bible, I just would not listen to it as much.

At this time, I was around three fourths done with that chapter, and I had the intention of putting this chapter in the end of that chapter. Just as I got done telling her of the main concepts that are in the last chapter, and was getting ready to tell of the concepts of this chapter, I heard a group of people in the background start to cheer. Something had just happened in the office, and they were celebrating. It was very loud in the background, in so much so that Livia started to apologize repeatedly. Then she said she had to get off the phone because she could not hear me.

After we got off the phone, I started to think about how this cheering happened just about the time I was done telling her of the concepts that are in this chapter. Now as I have told you all in previous books, there is no such thing as a coincidence, everything happens for a reason. Yes, even if you do not like the reason.

Well because I know that everybody is a servant and or vessel of God, it was Him that had Livia call me when she did. Then it was Him that caused all those people to start cheering just as I finished telling her the concepts of the last chapter. It was Him telling me that is where the chapter stops. And because I wasn't done explaining all that He had been showing me to Livia, I knew that meant that I had to do another chapter. He is the true author, and the people are bread for me. Bread being knowledge.

Only rebel not ye against the Lord, neither fear ye the people of the land; for they are bread for us: their defence is departed from them, and the Lord is with us: fear them not. (Numbers 14:9)

This is something that I did not understand until I was writing the last chapter. I am not sure if I have even brought it up in any of the previous books. Before we jump into this chapter, we need to listen to where we can hear about the second death.

Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. (Revelation 20:6)

He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit saith unto the churches; He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death. (Revelation 2:11)

I just did a quick google search about the first death, I am laughing because I got one up on google. And by the time we are done with this chapter, you will be one up on google also. So, where does the Bible talk about the first death? It talks about people dying all the time, and when first thinks about it, that sounds like the first death. But we need to remember that God said the covenant is for a thousand generations. Or as shown in previous books, a thousand lives. This is better covered in the fourth book, Jesus is here, and this shows how we are reincarnated for a thousand lives. So, that would mean that we die a thousand times.

I want to bring something to your remembrance really quick. I have been showing you all that everybody is part of the One Son of God, or that everybody is Jesus. This is how Jesus taste death for every man.

But we see Jesus, who was made a little lower than the angels for the suffering of death, crowned with glory and honour; that he by the grace of God should taste death for every man. (Hebrews 2:9)

This is how we know that Jesus taste death for every man. With that being said, we can know that we die a thousand times, so that cannot be the first death. Now to explain this, we need to be going over several areas of Bible.

I have been showing you all that we were in heaven at one time. When we were in heaven with our Father, we had life. It is because we all, at one time, decided that we were going to do things differently than our Father's ways. This is when we need to listen to when the beast, or dragon was cast here to earth, or hell. We talked about this a little earlier in this book, so we are only going to show some of this chapter.

And there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the sun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve stars: And she being with child cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered. And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and behold a great red dragon, having seven heads and ten horns, and seven crowns upon his heads. And his tail drew the third part of the stars of heaven, and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born. And she brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and to his throne. And the woman fled into the wilderness, where she hath a place prepared of God, that they should feed her there a thousand two hundred and threescore days. And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought against the dragon; and the dragon fought and his angels, And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven. And the great dragon was cast out, that old serpent, called the Devil, and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was cast

out into the earth, and his angels were cast out with him.(Revelation 12:1-9)

Now let us just think of all eight billion, plus people on the planet, what is the one thing that is all over inside our bodies? As I have said in many of the books, we all bleed the same blood, it is all red. What color is this beast? Remember, we are worshipping God in Spirit and truth. I am not saying that this is what the Father is telling me. I just thought of it as I was reading how the dragon is red in the scriptures. And when I think of it with my spiritual eyes, I can see how all of our blood would make this dragon red.

And as shown in previous books, the seven heads are the seven continents on the planet. Looking at it from above, this would make man the beast or creature.

I have told you all in previous books, that we are the stars that this dragon brought with him. So, what I want to do now, is show a couple of google searches that show how the human body is made up with a lot of the same elements that are found in stars.

Every atom of oxygen in our lungs, of carbon in our muscles, of calcium in our bones, of iron in our blood - was created inside a star before Earth was born. We Are Stardust | AMNH American Museum of Natural History <https://www.amnh.org> › stars › a-spectacular-stellar-finale

For decades, science popularizers have said humans are made of stardust, and now, a new survey of 150,000 stars shows just how true the old cliché is: Humans and their galaxy have about 97 percent of the same kind of atoms, and the elements of life appear to be more prevalent toward the galaxy's center, the research ... Jan 10, 2017 Humans Really Are Made of Stardust, and a New Study Proves It Space.com <https://www.space.com> › The Universe › Stars

PRECEPT SEVEN

Now the scriptures show that many people can and do represent one person, or one person can represent many.

And all the people arose as one man, saying, We will not any of us go to his tent, neither will we any of us turn into his house. But now this shall be the thing which we will do to Gibeah; we will go up by lot against it; And we will take ten men of an hundred throughout all the tribes of Israel, and an hundred of a thousand, and a thousand out of ten thousand, to fetch victual for the people, that they may do, when they come to Gibeah of Benjamin, according to all the folly that they have wrought in Israel. So all the men of Israel were gathered against the city, knit together as one man. (Judges 20:8-11)

And all the people gathered themselves together as one man into the street that was before the water gate; and they spake unto Ezra the scribe to bring the book of the law of Moses, which the Lord had commanded to Israel. (Nehemiah 8:1)

So, over eight billion people on the earth, stand as one, and one beast as well. And believe it or not, this world worships this beast. Remember these are visions, and the holy men that wrote them, spoke as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.

And I stood upon the sand of the sea, and saw a beast rise up out of the sea, having seven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blasphemy. And the beast which I saw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as the feet of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his seat, and great authority. And I saw one of his heads as it were

wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beast. And they worshipped the dragon which gave power unto the beast: and they worshipped the beast, saying, Who is like unto the beast? who is able to make war with him? And there was given unto him a mouth speaking great things and blasphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty and two months. And he opened his mouth in blasphemy against God, to blaspheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven. And it was given unto him to make war with the saints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations. And all that dwell upon the earth shall worship him, whose names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world. If any man have an ear, let him hear. He that leadeth into captivity shall go into captivity: he that killeth with the sword must be killed with the sword. Here is the patience and the faith of the saints. And I beheld another beast coming up out of the earth; and he had two horns like a lamb, and he spake as a dragon. And he exerciseth all the power of the first beast before him, and causeth the earth and them which dwell therein to worship the first beast, whose deadly wound was healed. And he doeth great wonders, so that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the sight of men, And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by the means of those miracles which he had power to do in the sight of the beast; saying to them that dwell on the earth, that they should make an image to the beast, which had the wound by a sword, and did live. And he had power to give life unto the image of the beast, that the image of the beast should both speak, and cause that

PRECEPT SEVEN

as many as would not worship the image of the beast should be killed. And he causeth all, both small and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads: And that no man might buy or sell, save he that had the mark, or the name of the beast, or the number of his name. Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six. (Revelation 13:1-18))

Before we go any further, we need to point out that we have been told that we are the beast. It is just worded differently. Listen to how some will be the head, and some will be the tail.

The Lord shall open unto thee his good treasure, the heaven to give the rain unto thy land in his season, and to bless all the work of thine hand: and thou shalt lend unto many nations, and thou shalt not borrow. And the Lord shall make thee the head, and not the tail; and thou shalt be above only, and thou shalt not be beneath; if that thou hearken unto the commandments of the Lord thy God, which I command thee this day, to observe and to do them: (Deuteronomy 28:12-13)

Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail. (Isaiah 9:14-15)

The reason this beast was cast from heaven is because of thinking that we could obtain perfection by doing things differently other than our perfect Father's way. Did you hear how the world worships this beast? Then to verify that man is the beast, we need to be listening to

the number of the beast for it is the number of a man. The man was made in their image on the sixth day of creation, as it is written. Now let us listen to the two greatest commandments again.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36=40)

When man chooses not to love God with all their heart, that is one six. When man chooses not to love God with all their soul, makes the second six. When man chooses not to love God with all their mind, makes the third six. And they all coincide, if man chooses not to love God with all their heart, then naturally they will not love Him with all their soul and mind. And of course, if man chooses not to love God with all their heart, soul and mind, they will not love their neighbor as thyself. And yes, as mentioned in previous books, this is the mark of the beast as well. The number of the beast being six hundred, threescore and six. This is read as 666.

Now let us listen to who the leader of this beast is.

How art thou fallen from heaven, O Lucifer, son of the morning! how art thou cut down to the ground, which didst weaken the nations! For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High. (Isaiah 14:12-14)

I think of Lucifer as to be the leader of the pack if you will. We all followed him because we thought that we could like the Most High,

by doing things differently than the Most High's and still obtain His perfection. So, now we need to listen to what the earth was like when our Father cast us out of heaven.

In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth. And the earth was without form, and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters. And God said, Let there be light: and there was light. And God saw the light, that it was good: and God divided the light from the darkness. And God called the light Day, and the darkness he called Night. And the evening and the morning were the first day. (Genesis 1:1-5)

The earth was without form,, and void, and darkness was upon the deep. Now think about this, we all chose to do things differently than the way we were when we were in heaven. Heaven being our Father's house. And because of our wanting to do things differently, we were disrupting His perfectly functioning house. It would have made His house to become without form. It would have made His house void, and darkness would have taken over.

Now that He cast us to the earth, the earth was without form because we had no idea of how to live. We were without His instructions, so we were and are full of darkness. Remember that His house was and is functioning perfectly, so now we must figure out how to get this new house that we are in, to function perfectly.

Remember how we showed how the human body is made up of mostly water? We are the waters that the spirit of God moved upon. This was Him putting a piece of Himself into each of us. That is what makes us all part of the One Son of God, as shown in the last book, Declaring The End From The Beginning. That was Him breathing life into us.

It was because our Father breathed this life into us, or created the light within all of us, that this world has taken the form that it

has. Just think of how there were no roads, buildings, houses, stores, money, etc. in the beginning. This is why we are told that Jesus is the light of the world.

Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life. (John 8:12)

Just a side note, this is what makes Jesus Lord of the Sabbath.

But I say unto you, That in this place is one greater than the temple. But if ye had known what this meaneth, I will have mercy, and not sacrifice, ye would not have condemned the guiltless. For the Son of man is Lord even of the sabbath day. (Matthew 12:6-8)

We all should know by now that the seventh day is the Sabbath day. God tells us about the first six days of creation, then He rested on the seventh.

Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And on the seventh day God ended his work which he had made; and he rested on the seventh day from all his work which he had made. And God blessed the seventh day, and sanctified it: because that in it he had rested from all his work which God created and made. (Genesis 2:1-3)

The seventh day is when our Father put all things to us, us all being part of the One Son of God. This makes Jesus the leader, or the Lord of the Sabbath. This is why we are not to call Jesus Lord except by the Holy Ghost. It is this Holy Ghost in which is telling each of us what to do for a living so that the world has come to form as it has.

Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed:

and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. (1 Corinthians 12:3)

Then after our Father did this, listen to what He told us.

But there went up a mist from the earth, and watered the whole face of the ground. And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man became a living soul. And the Lord God planted a garden eastward in Eden; and there he put the man whom he had formed. And out of the ground made the Lord God to grow every tree that is pleasant to the sight, and good for food; the tree of life also in the midst of the garden, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil . And a river went out of Eden to water the garden; and from thence it was parted, and became into four heads. The name of the first is Pison: that is it which compasseth the whole land of Havilah, where there is bdellium and the onyx stone. And the name of the second river is Gihon: the same is it that compasseth the whole land of Ethiopia. And the name of the third river is Hiddekel: that is it which goeth toward the east of Assyria. And the fourth river is Euphrates. And the Lord God took the man, and put him into the garden of Eden to dress it and to keep it. And the Lord God commanded the man, saying, Of every tree of the garden thou mayest freely eat: But of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, thou shalt not eat of it: for in the day that thou eatest thereof thou shalt surely die. (Genesis 2:6=17)

First and foremost, notice how we are not told when our Father created us from the dust of the ground. On the sixth day, He said let us make man in our image, in our likeness. That is because we were

already here. We came from the stars; those stars are the mansions in my Father's house.

Let not your heart be troubled: ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's house are many mansions: if it were not so, I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again, and receive you unto myself; that where I am, there ye may be also. (John 14:1-3)

The stars are the mansions, but notice how we are not told that Jesus will go and prepare a mansion for us, he said he will go and prepare a place for you. Anyway, I digress. I must confess, I am finding it extremely hard not to write about things that we have written about in previous books. Think about this, we are told that we no light. Now listen to this.

And there shall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the sun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they shall reign for ever and ever. (Revelation 22:5)

According to a quick google search that I just did, the closest star is 25,300,000,000,000 miles away from the earth. Yes, that is over 25 trillion miles away, but yet we can see them from here. If that is your domicile, you would need no light whatsoever.

I need to say this now, the scriptures were written for our learning, so when God told Adam not to eat from this tree in the midst of the garden, He was and is saying this to all of us.

Now we need to listen to what happened after we refused to listen to what our Father said, and chose to do as the serpent, the devil, or Satan told us.

Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said

unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden. And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put

enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and thou shalt bruise his heel. Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living. Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them. And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. (Genesis 3:1-24)

Remember how the stars were cast to earth but we are never told what happened to them. No where in the Bible does it tell us directly. But when we listen to how the serpent, the devil, or Satan was cast to earth, we are told where he got locked up, and that is our bellies as shown in previous books, is where he got locked up But notice how we were kicked out of the Garden of Eden. Not because our Father

PRECEPT SEVEN

is mean, cruel, vindictive, or unjustified, but because we again, chose to listen to the serpent rather than our Father.

Do you remember reading just a short time ago, that God said if you eat of this tree, you will surely die? Adam and Eve did not physically die. Adam lived to be 930 years old. We are not told how old Eve was when she died.

The wise man's eyes are in his head; but the fool walketh in darkness: and I myself perceived also that one event happeneth to them all. (Ecclesiastes 2:14)

For all this I considered in my heart even to declare all this, that the righteous, and the wise, and their works, are in the hand of God: no man knoweth either love or hatred by all that is before them. All things come alike to all: there is one event to the righteous, and to the wicked; to the good and to the clean, and to the unclean; to him that sacrificeth, and to him that sacrificeth not: as is the good, so is the sinner; and he that sweareth, as he that feareth an oath. This is an evil among all things that are done under the sun, that there is one event unto all: yea, also the heart of the sons of men is full of evil, and madness is in their heart while they live, and after that they go to the dead. (Ecclesiastes 9:1-3)

We all got kicked out of the garden of Eden. This is the first death, since then, everybody that has been living in the flesh, has been walking dead. This is why we are told that we walk through the valley of death.

Yea, though I walk through the valley of the shadow of death, I will fear no evil: for thou art with me; thy rod and thy staff they comfort me.(Psalm 23:4)

Though thou hast sore broken us in the place of dragons, and covered us with the shadow of death.
(Psalm 44:19)

Neither said they, Where is the Lord that brought us up out of the land of Egypt, that led us through the wilderness, through a land of deserts and of pits, through a land of drought, and of the shadow of death, through a land that no man passed through, and where no man dwelt?(Jeremiah 2:6)

For the morning is to them even as the shadow of death: if one know them, they are in the terrors of the shadow of death. (Job 24:17)

To give light to them that sit in darkness and in the shadow of death, to guide our feet into the way of peace. (Luke 1:79)

Now we can truly understand what it means to hear let the dead bury the dead.

And he said unto another, Follow me. But he said, Lord, suffer me first to go and bury my father. Jesus said unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God. (Luke 9:59-60)

Now if you are thinking that you had nothing to do with what Adam and Eve did, listen to this and see if it will help you understand.

Wherefore, as by one man sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned:(For until the law sin was in the world: but sin is not imputed when there is no law. Nevertheless death reigned from Adam to Moses, even over them that had not sinned after the similitude of Adam's transgression, who is the figure

PRECEPT SEVEN

of him that was to come. But not as the offence, so also is the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, which is by one man, Jesus Christ, hath abounded unto many. And not as it was by one that sinned, so is the gift: for the judgment was by one to condemnation, but the free gift is of many offences unto justification. For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteousness shall reign in life by one, Jesus Christ.) Therefore as by the offence of one judgment came upon all men to condemnation; even so by the righteousness of one the free gift came upon all men unto justification of life. For as by one man's disobedience many were made sinners, so by the obedience of one shall many be made righteous. Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where sin abounded, grace did much more abound: That as sin hath reigned unto death, even so might grace reign through righteousness unto eternal life by Jesus Christ our Lord. (Romans 5:12-21)

This is the death in which we are to overcome. And this is when our Father said turn back to me.

Thou turnest man to destruction; and sayest, Return, ye children of men. (Psalm 90:3)

Then notice how our Father placed fire all around the garden of Eden. That was Him telling us, without telling us, that we are going to have go through this fire to get back into the Garden of Eden. Let us listen to how we are told that people do not know that the dead are there, and people are the depths of hell. Then listen to how the

wicked will be turned into hell. Then we are told that the people will be the fuel for the fire.

Whoso is simple, let him turn in hither: and as for him that wanteth understanding, she saith to him, Stolen waters are sweet, and bread eaten in secret is pleasant. But he knoweth not that the dead are there; and that her guests are in the depths of hell. (Proverbs 9:16-18)

The wicked shall be turned into hell, and all the nations that forget God. (Psalm 9:17)

Through the wrath of the Lord of hosts is the land darkened, and the people shall be as the fuel of the fire: no man shall spare his brother. (Isaiah 9:19)

But we must do this while we are living in Satan's kingdom. That is why we are told the god of this world has blinded our eyes.

In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. (2 Corinthians 4:4)

Why did Satan do this one might ask? Well, he needed his kingdom to grow just as God the Father told us in the begging. Be fruitful, multiply, and replenish the earth. Satan wanted his family to grow just as our Father wanted His family to grow. But that does not mean that we can blame this on Satan and say it is his fault. We made the choice ourselves and have nobody to blame but ourselves.

Now we need to talk about how God tells us that man's day will not be but one hundred twenty years.

PRECEPT SEVEN

And the Lord said, My spirit shall not always strive with man, for that he also is flesh: yet his days shall be an hundred and twenty years.(Genesis 6:3)

This is not one hundred twenty of man's years, this is one hundred twenty of our Father's years. Because we do not have any idea of what a year is to our Father, we can figure that when this time period is expired, is when all things will be fulfilled. We can know that we are close to that time being expired when we listen to this.

But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. (Galatians 4:4-5)

Here I am, but I am not done writing books yet, so we still have a little time before He makes me into the first born. Now I want to talk about how God said Adam and Eve would die the day they ate of the tree in the midst of the garden. Have you ever heard anyone say that they did die the day they ate from that tree? You have now, the day they ate of it, they were kicked out of the garden. Inside that garden, there is eternal life. Now that they were out of it. They had to go through dying. But before they would die, they would have to suffer by living on the land without God's instructions. They had to figure out how to survive, knowing that they were going to die someday. And then this would go on for a thousand different lives, or generations.

This is where I want to talk about something that I brought up in the last book. Or it might have been the fifth book. I brought up how it will be just as the days of Noah, and we connected how there will be five months of torment just as the water were on the earth for a hundred fifty days. When I am revealed. We are going to be looking at the five months of torment.

And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key

of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads. And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man. And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them. (Revelation 9:1-6)

Without describing what all this means again, we need to talk about how the days will come that men will seek death, and shall not find it, and shall desire to die. Then death shall flee from them. This is going to start right after the Father reveals me to the world. Life as we know it will become very hard. When this is saying men will seek to die, this is also talking about women. We have explained this in previous books, so we will not show that here. This is going to be the process of the dead in Christ rising from the dead. When He reveals me, He will start to pour out His spirit and people will start having dreams and prophesying.

I have been saying it since the Father first called me to the Bible, there is no rapture. I took part in the first resurrection, and I am still here, writing books. But there is a day coming, that all will be taking part in this resurrection, but this will not be as fun for some.

And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. (John 5:29)

PRECEPT SEVEN

And have hope toward God, which they themselves also allow, that there shall be a resurrection of the dead, both of the just and unjust. (Acts 24:15)

I do believe that this is when our Father will pour out His spirit.

But this is that which was spoken by the prophet Joel; And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream dreams: And on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy: And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath; blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke: (Acts 2:16-19)

He has been pouring His Spirit on me at a slow and steady pace for several years now. I believe when He does this will be when the resurrection of the dead will happen to all, the just and unjust at the same time.

When He reveals me, people will start to read these books, but at the same time He will be pouring out His spirit on the rest of the world. It will not happen in an instance. It will take time for people to read the books, then it will take some time to do as I have done. It will take some time for people to be born again. When people are born again, it is not something that one does instantaneously. This is the time that people must put on incorruptible and put on immortality.

Being born again, not of corruptible seed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever. 1 Peter 1:23)

In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the last trump: for the trumpet shall sound, and the dead

shall be raised incorruptible, and we shall be changed. For this corruptible must put on incorruption, and this mortal must put on immortality. So when this corruptible shall have put on incorruption, and this mortal shall have put on immortality, then shall be brought to pass the saying that is written, Death is swallowed up in victory. O death, where is thy sting? O grave, where is thy victory? The sting of death is sin; and the strength of sin is the law. But thanks be to God, which giveth us the victory through our Lord Jesus Christ. Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye stedfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord. (1 Corinthians 15:52-58)

Okay, we need to talk about this. When we hear in a moment, in a twinkling of an eye, many people think that this means that will be changed into the spirit form instantly, and they will not have to endure the tribulation that is to come. That is their imagination talking and our Father hates it when people listen to their imagination. Notice how it states that the corruptible must put of incorruption. And this mortal must put on immortality? What changes in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, is the way one thinks. That is a process, and it also will have to be your choice. The Father will not force this on anyone.

Now I am going to talk a bit about the last trump. He is well known and is running for president again. When we wrote the fourth book, Jesus is here, I was saying that he was the last trump. Because of me being told to make my name known, having that servant say that she was supposed to say Jesus is here, me seeing the flood, the Covid-10 ravishing through the world, the global economic turmoil, etc. I started to think that the Father was going to reveal me then.

But as usual, I got ahead of the Father's timing. At that time, I had no idea that their were at least three more books to follow. So, I knew, and I know that he is the last trump. But now I am not going to venture a guess as to when this will start because as of right now,

it could be the last trump because he is running for the last time. It could be after he gets into the office and that will be his last time that he can be in the office of the president.

I am certain that the trumpet that shall sound, will not be an actual trumpet. It could be sounding now with the war that is taking place in Israel. I say that because that is the reason I am writing this book, and as you can tell, our Father has really been revealing some in depth knowledge in this book. And yes, the last chapter in this book will be talking a lot about that.

When He reveals me and this pouring out of His spirit on everybody starts to take place, many will realize that nobody has been saved yet. How could anybody be saved if they haven't known what they needed to be saved from? This will be when many will wonder if their name is written in the book of life or not.

The beast that thou sawest was, and is not; and shall ascend out of the bottomless pit, and go into perdition: and they that dwell on the earth shall wonder, whose names were not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beast that was, and is not, and yet is. (Revelation 17:8)

We have been told that many think that they are doing right, but their ways are the ways of death.

There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death. (Proverbs 14:12)

There is a way that seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death. (Proverbs 16:25)

There is a generation that are pure in their own eyes, and yet is not washed from their filthiness. (Proverbs 30:12)

This is also the time that many people will be ashamed for thinking they way that they have.

Let all mine enemies be ashamed and sore vexed: let them return and be ashamed suddenly. (Psalm 6:10)

Lord, when thy hand is lifted up, they will not see: but they shall see, and be ashamed for their envy at the people; yea, the fire of thine enemies shall devour them. (Isaiah n26:11)

But the Lord is with me as a mighty terrible one: therefore my persecutors shall stumble, and they shall not prevail: they shall be greatly ashamed; for they shall not prosper: their everlasting confusion shall never be forgotten. (Jeremiah 20:11)

This is why we have been told that the pathway to destruction is wide and broad and there many that will find it.

Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction, and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it. (Matthew 7:13-14)

And that is because there are many that will never inherit the kingdom of God as we have been told.

Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind, Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God. (1 Corinthians 6:9-10)

PRECEPT SEVEN

Now the works of the flesh are manifest, which are these; Adultery, fornication, uncleanness, lasciviousness, Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, strife, seditions, heresies, Envyings, murders, drunkenness, revellings, and such like: of the which I tell you before, as I have also told you in time past, that they which do such things shall not (Galatians 5:19-21)

This is also when many will come as say that they have cast of devils and prophesied in my name, but I will say turn away for I never knew you. We will be talking about this in a couple of chapters.

Many will say to me in that day, Lord, Lord, have we not prophesied in thy name? and in thy name have cast out devils? and in thy name done many wonderful works? And then will I profess unto them, I never knew you: depart from me, ye that work iniquity. (Matthew 7:22-23)

Now this one in Matthew, is not what it seems. I will not be telling people to their face to get away from me. But because the Father and I are one, their conscience will be told to keep from reading these books that our Father had me write. They will spiritually be told to turn away from me, or my books, which will keep them from knowing the truth. And they will not be set free.

Now we need to listen when we are told that the first shall be last and the last shall be first. I am adding this here because this is a lesson that was taught to me within the last couple of days, with it becoming complete today. Today is January 29th and the verse of the day is.

And he sat down, and called the twelve, and saith unto them, If any man desire to be first, the same shall be last of all, and servant of all.(Mark 9:35)

Until this morning, I truly did not understand what this meant. This all started when I picked up a load of onions in Idaho on the 26th. I got loaded in the morning and had until the 31st to deliver the load. But at the same time, this is a place that we go frequently, and we can drop our trailer as soon as we can get it there if we want. I was thinking that this would give me time to work on this book. As I was driving Friday, I started thinking that I could just drive eight or nine hours a day, and I would still get there early. Then after having about eight hours of driving done, I started to feel that I should see if I could make it to Billings, MT. I had the hours, so I went to a truck stop in Billings Montana. When I arrived at the truck stop, I had seven minutes left of my drive time on my eleven-hour clock.

I worked on the book until four in the morning Saturday, thinking I could sleep in and just do the same Saturday. After driving about nine hours that day, I worked on the book as well until three in the morning Sunday. Now come Sunday, I only had about eight hours of driving left before arriving at the customers. So, taking my time, I stopped at a Walmart and got some necessities. I arrived at the customers in Wisconsin at between seven and eight on Sunday evening.

When I pulled into the parking lot, there had to be at least five or six other trucks there with the same company waiting on an empty trailer. I figured no big deal because I can just work on the book. And that is exactly what I did until three in the morning on Monday.

Then I awoke and listened to the verse of the day wrap three times. Ever since the Father started to show me that all this time away from the Bible was actually a lesson, and I am descending down into hell. I have been listening like there is no tomorrow. I am back to the way I was before. I am obsessed with listening to it again, and maybe a little bit more obsessed with it now. So, I have started to listen to the wrap three times instead of two. And something very similar to the verse of the day was mentioned in the next chapter as well.

Then Peter began to say unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee. And Jesus answered and

said, Verily I say unto you, There is no man that hath left house, or brethren, or sisters, or father, or mother, or wife, or children, or lands, for my sake, and the gospel's, But he shall receive an hundredfold now in this time, houses, and brethren, and sisters, and mothers, and children, and lands, with persecutions; and in the world to come eternal life. But many that are first shall be last; and the last first. (Mark 10:28-31)

I made a few notes, thinking that I didn't need to rush because I knew there had to be at least two or three of those trucks that were going to get their empty before I did. After listening to the wrap, I climbed out of the truck to see all of the trucks that were there when I got there, still waiting on an empty.

I took my bills inside to get them signed. And as the woman was signing my bill of lading, she told me that it would be a long time before they could get me an empty. Okay I thought, I will just drop the trailer, park and work on the book. So, I dropped the trailer and parked the truck off to the side between two other trucks. I sent my dispatcher a message letting him know that I didn't think I will be able to get my next load because there were several trucks in front of me, waiting on an empty.

I sat there for maybe five minutes before I seen a different woman come out of the warehouse. She seemed to be looking for a specific truck. She kept looking at me and my truck number. I was thinking that there is no way she is coming to get me. Then she started towards my truck, as I started to row down my window. Then she stopped, turned around and started to walk away. Then she turned back around and came to the side of my truck and asked if I was David.

I told her yes I am, then she said this empty is for you. Not thinking about it to hard, I asked which one. She told that she will remove the jack stands out from under the one I needed to grab. I started to think that maybe the next load I was planned on needed to be delivered urgently or something. I mean, she did call me by name, so I figured someone had told her that I needed to go.

Then as I am getting ready to back under it, the yard driver came over to stop me. He told me that the other drivers were ahead of me. I told him that the one woman told me to grab this trailer. She was still out there, and she came over and told him that she was told by her boss that she was to find David with my truck number and that I was the one that supposed to take this trailer.

As they were talking about it, I seen one of the drivers that had been waiting awhile, come over to talk with them. After a couple minutes of talking, the driver said okay angrily, and walked back to his truck. The yard driver came back over to me that he was sorry and to go ahead and hook up. I started looking around and I could see some of the other drivers that had been there before me, calling someone, or at least talking on the phone. I think they were calling their dispatchers because they were pretty mad as well.

Then after I did my pre trip to make sure all is safe to roll, I pulled out of the parking lot. I was starting to feel a little guilty because I know the routine, first in is the first out. It just didn't feel right because all of those drivers were there before me. And as soon as I got on the road, the Father told me that He did that. I said okay, I know I am in the Garden of Eden now, and have been, and I now understand what the new heaven and new earth is about. I understand how to stay in heaven now, and I understand how you have made all things new for me, but is this how it is going to be when you reveal me?

Now I had noticed the reefer trailer needed some fuel, and I knew there is a small truck stop just before I get out of town. After stopping, grabbing a bite to eat, I felt like calling Cathy to share with her what had just happened. I was and still am in total awe, it was just so weird how that worked. Then as I am talking to her, it dawned on me. I was the last one to get there, but I was the first one to leave with an empty, just as the scriptures teach. Just as I listened to in the verse of the day wrap.

I was just working on this chapter last night; I had placed a few things in the wrong spot that needed to be explained better. And as I was doing this, I felt like there was something that I wasn't covering,

but I could not figure it out. Until this morning after listening to the verse of the day wrap, and finishing this lesson.

This is why there will be some that will not taste death until they see the kingdom of coming.

And he said unto them, Verily I say unto you, That there be some of them that stand here, which shall not taste of death, till they have seen the kingdom of God come with power. (Mark 9:1)

It was the Father that pushed me to deliver this load so quickly. I do nothing on my own. When I started this trip, I had every intention of taking my time. But if I would have taken my time, the Father would not have been able to teach me how this is going to work.

And because I have been driving for almost thirty-three years now, I know what those drivers were feeling when they saw me get the first empty even though they had been there well before I got there. I have been in the docks before and seen trucks come in after me and then leave before me, it burns and there is absolutely nothing you can do about it.

This also relates to how many that have a belief in God the Father but have gotten a lot of their knowledge by other means than the King James Version of the Bible. They have gained a lot of wisdom, but are now going to have to let go of this wisdom. Humble themselves so that they can be retaught. And because of this, it will be more difficult for them to understand what is going on. This will make them last to rise, but they will get there.

And that is how it is going to be for any and all that start listening to our Father. This is when we realize that many will come down and sit in the kingdom, but the children of the kingdom will be cast into outer darkness.

And I say unto you, That many shall come from the east and west, and shall sit down with Abraham, and Isaac, and Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven. But the

children of the kingdom shall be cast out into outer darkness: there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth. Matthew 8:11-12)

These that are cast out into out darkness will be the people that thirst for the knowledge in these books. We are given an example of this in the scriptures.

There was a certain rich man, which was clothed in purple and fine linen, and fared sumptuously every day: And there was a certain beggar named Lazarus, which was laid at his gate, full of sores, And desiring to be fed with the crumbs which fell from the rich man's table: moreover the dogs came and licked his sores. And it came to pass, that the beggar died, and was carried by the angels into Abraham's bosom: the rich man also died, and was buried; And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom. And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame. But Abraham said, Son, remember that thou in thy lifetime receivedst thy good things, and likewise Lazarus evil things: but now he is comforted, and thou art tormented. (Luke 16:19-25)

They will desire to learn the truth because they will start to see to rewards that are being giving to all of us that rise from the dead. They will be extremely thirsty for this knowledge, but will be kept from it because of what they have done unto others, in their lives.

I overcame this first death; I took part in the first resurrection. I was the first to rise from the dead. Now the second death, which is the end of the world, has no power over me. So, now we would like to ask you a question.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Have the gates of death been opened unto thee? or hast thou seen the doors of the shadow of death? (Job 38:17)

I will physically die because the flesh cannot leave the planet, but dying in my mind, is going to sleep and waking somewhere else. It is not death.

Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years. (Revelation 20:6)

In the beginning of this chapter, I mentioned that I got one up on google. I do because nobody has understood what the first death was about. According to google, the first death is when someone physically dies. But now we know that the first death happened in the very beginning of the Bible, or the beginning of us living on earth. Wow! Talk about declaring the end from the beginning.

Now back to where I was before this lesson. When I awoke this morning and started to listen to the verse of the day wrap, a question came to mind. How can anyone be saved if nobody knows what they need to be saved from. That is why we are told to wait on the Lord Jesus.

And not only they, but ourselves also, which have the firstfruits of the Spirit, even we ourselves groan within ourselves, waiting for the adoption, to wit, the redemption of our body. For we are saved by hope: but hope that is seen is not hope: for what a man seeth, why doth he yet hope for? But if we hope for that we see not, then do we with patience wait for it. (Romans 8:23-25)

So that ye come behind in no gift; waiting for the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ: (1 Corinthians 1:7)

Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkness, and will make manifest the counsels of the hearts: and then shall every man have praise of God. (1 Corinthians 4:5)

And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, even Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come. (1 Thessalonians 1:10)

Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the husbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain. Be ye also patient; stablish your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh. (James 5:7-8)

The world had to wait until I had gone through enough schooling with our Father so that He could teach me what the first death is. And how to overcome the first death so that I could share my experiences. Now I can truly understand why we are told that if a man thinks that he knows anything, he know nothing.

And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know. (1 Corinthians 8:2)

Now here is the good news, our Father does not look at what we have done in the past and still welcomes us into His house with open arms. But there is one requirement.

And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent: Because he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteousness by that man whom

PRECEPT SEVEN

he hath ordained; whereof he hath given assurance unto all men, in that he hath raised him from the dead. (Acts 17:30=31)

But if from thence thou shalt seek the Lord thy God, thou shalt find him, if thou seek him with all thy heart and with all thy soul. When thou art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the Lord thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice;(For the Lord thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he sware unto them. (Deuteronomy 4:29-31)

And it shall come to pass, when all these things are come upon thee, the blessing and the curse, which I have set before thee, and thou shalt call them to mind among all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath driven thee, And shalt return unto the Lord thy God, and shalt obey his voice according to all that I command thee this day, thou and thy children, with all thine heart, and with all thy soul; That then the Lord thy God will turn thy captivity, and have compassion upon thee, and will return and gather thee from all the nations, whither the Lord thy God hath scattered thee. If any of thine be driven out unto the outmost parts of heaven, from thence will the Lord thy God gather thee, and from thence will he fetch thee: And the Lord thy God will bring thee into the land which thy fathers possessed, and thou shalt possess it; and he will do thee good, and multiply thee above thy fathers. And the Lord thy God will circumcise thine heart, and the heart of thy seed, to love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, that thou mayest live. And the Lord thy

God will put all these curses upon thine enemies, and on them that hate thee, which persecuted thee. And thou shalt return and obey the voice of the Lord, and do all his commandments which I command thee this day. And the Lord thy God will make thee plenteous in every work of thine hand, in the fruit of thy body, and in the fruit of thy cattle, and in the fruit of thy land, for good: for the Lord will again rejoice over thee for good, as he rejoiced over thy fathers: If thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to keep his commandments and his statutes which are written in this book of the law, and if thou turn unto the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul. For this commandment which I command thee this day, it is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. It is not in heaven, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go up for us to heaven, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? Neither is it beyond the sea, that thou shouldest say, Who shall go over the sea for us, and bring it unto us, that we may hear it, and do it? But the word is very nigh unto thee, in thy mouth, and in thy heart, that thou mayest do it. See, I have set before thee this day life and good, and death and evil; In that I command thee this day to love the Lord thy God, to walk in his ways, and to keep his commandments and his statutes and his judgments, that thou mayest live and multiply: and the Lord thy God shall bless thee in the land whither thou goest to possess it. (Deuteronomy 30:1-16)

Listen to how we are being told that what He commands is not hidden from thee, neither is it far off. When you read, or listen to the King James Version of the Bible, let Him talk to you. STOP thinking that it is about people of the past, and just know that He is talking to

you. And for those that agree with the way things are, there is great news for you as well.

Wherefore hear the word of the Lord, ye scornful men, that rule this people which is in Jerusalem. Because ye have said, We have made a covenant with death, and with hell are we at agreement; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, it shall not come unto us: for we have made lies our refuge, and under falsehood have we hid ourselves: Therefore thus saith the Lord God, Behold, I lay in Zion for a foundation a stone, a tried stone, a precious corner stone, a sure foundation: he that believeth shall not make haste. Judgment also will I lay to the line, and righteousness to the plummet: and the hail shall sweep away the refuge of lies, and the waters shall overflow the hiding place. And your covenant with death shall be disannulled, and your agreement with hell shall not stand; when the overflowing scourge shall pass through, then ye shall be trodden down by it. (Isaiah 28:14-18)

With all that being said, now is the time to repent, seek our Father with of you heart, soul, mind, and strength just as I have. Work your way through that fire. Come and take part of the first resurrection with me. Come dine with me in the Garden of Eden. And we must remember, we need to be doers of the word because faith without works is dead.

But be ye doers of the word, and not hearers only, deceiving your own selves. For if any be a hearer of the word, and not a doer, he is like unto a man beholding his natural face in a glass: For he beholdeth himself, and goeth his way, and straightway forgetteth what manner of man he was. But whoso looketh into the perfect law of liberty, and continueth therein, he being

not a forgetful hearer, but a doer of the work, this man shall be blessed in his deed. (James 1:22-25)

But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. (James 2:20-26)

All that will follow me, by doing as I have will rise from the dead, they will take part in the first resurrection, and death will no longer have dominion over them as death no longer has dominion over me.

What shall we say then? Shall we continue in sin, that grace may abound? God forbid. How shall we, that are dead to sin, live any longer therein? Know ye not, that so many of us as were baptized into Jesus Christ were baptized into his death? Therefore we are buried with him by baptism into death: that like as Christ was raised up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even so we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been planted together in the likeness of his death, we shall be also in the likeness of his resurrection: Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with him, that the body of sin might be destroyed, that henceforth we should not serve sin.

PRECEPT SEVEN

For he that is dead is freed from sin. Now if we be dead with Christ, we believe that we shall also live with him: Knowing that Christ being raised from the dead dieth no more; death hath no more dominion over him. For in that he died, he died unto sin once: but in that he liveth, he liveth unto God. Likewise reckon ye also yourselves to be dead indeed unto sin, but alive unto God through Jesus Christ our Lord. Let not sin therefore reign in your mortal body, that ye should obey it in the lusts thereof. (Romans 6:1-12)

For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth them; even so the Son quickeneth whom he will. For the Father judgeth no man, but hath committed all judgment unto the Son: That all men should honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath sent him. Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life. Verily, verily, I say unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. For as the Father hath life in himself; so hath he given to the Son to have life in himself; And hath given him authority to execute judgment also, because he is the Son of man. Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming, in the which all that are in the graves shall hear his voice, And shall come forth; they that have done good, unto the resurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the resurrection of damnation. (John 5:21-29)

Get thee behind me Satan

The way our Father told me to write this chapter is not in a way that was pleasant. I have told you all in previous books, that whenever someone ask me how I am doing, I always tell them that I am doing better than I deserve. Well, I just had gotten fuel on the truck about a month ago or so, when the cashier asked me how I was doing. I told her the usual, better than I deserve, but she said that I deserve better.

Now this happens every now and again, and I usually just tell people why I feel I am doing better than I deserve, and that is the end of it. But she insisted that I deserve better for a couple of minutes with me continuing with all the reason I don't feel I deserve better.

Then when that conversation finally quieted, she told me to have a happy new year. I tell her that I do not celebrate any holidays because our heavenly Father never told us to celebrate these days. She kept saying, "You have a happy new year". I then told her by celebrating these days, you are adding to the word of God in which we are told not to do.

Ye shall not add unto the word which I command you,
neither shall ye diminish ought from it, that ye may
keep the commandments of the Lord your God which
I command you. (Deuteronomy 4:2)

Yes, I even told her where in the Bible that we are told this. Between the better than I deserve talk and the holiday, I am guessing was close to five minutes or so. She just wouldn't stop. Then the last time she told me to have a happy new year, I just grabbed my thermos of coffee and walked out the door. I was so mad that I wanted to pull

the hair out of my head. I had never had anyone come at me like that before, and I have been like this for years.

Well, as soon as I sat in my truck, shut the door, and started it back up, it just blurted out of my mouth. Get thee behind me Satan for thou savourest the ways of man and not of God.

Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. (Matthew 16:22-23)

At first, I thought within myself, that has to do with how man tries to save their lives and not holidays and such. Then after a couple of hours of being just totally ticked off about this, I finally started to humble myself, let my guard down and asked our Father why He had this servant do this.

Now before we go any further, I need to explain why I tell you that I started to humble myself. I do not know if many realize this or not, but when your angry, your spiritually burning inside. For a lot of people, this only make some even angrier. But listen to this.

And he said, Go forth, and stand upon the mount before the Lord. And, behold, the Lord passed by, and a great and strong wind rent the mountains, and brake in pieces the rocks before the Lord; but the Lord was not in the wind: and after the wind an earthquake; but the Lord was not in the earthquake: And after the earthquake a fire; but the Lord was not in the fire: and after the fire a still small voice. (1 Kings 19:10-12)

Let us think about this, if you're in an area that has very strong winds, in so much as to they might cause havoc, you're not in a calm and still state of mind. If you are in an earthquake, same thing, you're

not in a still and calm state of mind. If you are in a house that is on fire, you are not in a still and calm state of mind. But when you're not in any of these, you tend to let our guard down. In other words, we are be told, be still, be calm, and just listen to what He has to say. That is when we can accept what He is saying.

After talking with our Father for a bit, I realized that this does not only apply for people trying to save their lives, but has to do with any of the ways of man, and not of God. then it hit me like a ton of bricks. Oh, you want me to do a chapter on this, so here it is.

And we are going to start with why I tell people that I am doing better than I deserve all the time. Yes, I even tell people this when I am having a difficult day, no matter what kind of mood I am in.

In the first book that the Father had me write back in 2015, He had me show that no matter our circumstances, we should be thankful that we are still alive. When He did this, I was a little shocked as to what He had me say. But now since I have a much deeper understanding of Him, what He is doing, why He is doing what He is doing, and the King James Version of the Bible, I know if you are reading this, then you too, are doing better than you deserve.

First and foremost, we already learned how we all transgressed our Father's law. I am not talking about while we are in the flesh yet, I am talking about how we all followed Satan. I am talking about when He kicked us out of His house. That could have been the end of it right there. He had every right to say that's it, you will never have the opportunity to live with me again. But He didn't, He then made the earth for man to dwell on.

Just a little side note here, I do not believe there were ever dinosaurs. Or not in the way that they are portrayed to be. I believe that they find some sort of skeleton and use their imagination to form the rest of it and it's habits. I encourage you to do a little research on this for yourself. But I believe that our Father made this planet for mankind and not some animal that would frequently eat us.

So, He made the earth for us in which He did not have to. Then He made the human body in which man cannot figure out how to do. I got to comment on this even though I have brought it in previous

books. Think about this, a little liquid comes from the man, into the woman to fertilize an egg. Then this baby starts to form. This child started from just an egg, then develops a heart, bones, blood vessels, blood, nerves, other organs, and a brain. Then when this child is born, he or she comes out of a body of water, then needs oxygen. Then as time goes by, all of this with the baby grows for several years. And this child learns how to think for themselves. They learn how to eat, crawl, walk, talk, run, and much more. And all this time, we never need to be recharged by any means other than food, water, and sleep. It just amazes me of how smart our Father is because we came from the stars.

Then when we got here, we still disobeyed Him and got kicked out of the Garden of Eden. But yet, He didn't say that's it, again. I think that is enough to know that He loved us first.

Herein is our love made perfect, that we may have boldness in the day of judgment: because as he is, so are we in this world. There is no fear in love; but perfect love casteth out fear: because fear hath torment. He that feareth is not made perfect in love. We love him, because he first loved us. (1 John 4:17-19)

Then in the days of Noah, our Father was fed up with us again because man listened to their imagination of the thoughts of their hearts, which was evil continually, instead of Him.

And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. And it repented the Lord that he had made man on the earth, and it grieved him at his heart. And the Lord said, I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth; both man, and beast, and the creeping thing, and the fowls of the air; for it repenteth me that I have made them. But Noah found grace in the eyes of the Lord. (Genesis 6:5-8)

But God the Father saved Noah and his family. Why, so that man would not be completely destroyed for all eternity.

Which sometime were disobedient, when once the longsuffering of God waited in the days of Noah, while the ark was a preparing, wherein few, that is, eight souls were saved by water. (1 Peter 3:20)

Then we became disobedient again, in fact, it didn't take no time at all for one of Noah's sons to go against our Father's law.

And Noah began to be an husbandman, and he planted a vineyard: And he drank of the wine, and was drunken; and he was uncovered within his tent. And Ham, the father of Canaan, saw the nakedness of his father, and told his two brethren without. And Shem and Japheth took a garment, and laid it upon both their shoulders, and went backward, and covered the nakedness of their father; and their faces were backward, and they saw not their father's nakedness. And Noah awoke from his wine, and knew what his younger son had done unto him. (Genesis 9:20-24)

Then there are numerous times throughout the Old Testament, that the people were disobedient. Listing all the times that God was not pleased with the people, would just take up too much room to put in this book. In fact, The New Testament is not any better.

Then our Father caused the holy men to write what they wrote through the Holy Ghost. Why? So, we would have a letter of instructions on how to live our lives.

For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2 Peter 1:21)

This long letter, being the King James Version of the Bible is not only a letter from Him to teach us how to live, but it shows us how to get to know Him and all that He is about. This letter teaches us how to truly love others as we love ourselves.

Now I realize that the scriptures were written for our learning, but this too shows us how loving He is, how patient He is, how longsuffering He is, how forgiving He is, how merciful He is, how graceful He is, and how peaceful He is.

I cannot forget that our Father will do things unto us that might seem to be evil, but if we stay calm and just think about it, He is trying to teach us something.

But he said unto her, Thou speakest as one of the foolish women speaketh. What? shall we receive good at the hand of God, and shall we not receive evil? In all this did not Job sin with his lips. (Job 2:10)

And of course, if something happens that I might think is evil, maybe my Father is trying to get me to stop doing what I am doing. Let us listen to when we can hear about this in the New Testament, and then let us listen to the story in the Old Testament.

But was rebuked for his iniquity: the dumb ass speaking with man's voice forbad the madness of the prophet. (2 Peter 2:16)

And Balaam rose up in the morning, and saddled his ass, and went with the princes of Moab. And God's anger was kindled because he went: and the angel of the Lord stood in the way for an adversary against him. Now he was riding upon his ass, and his two servants were with him. And the ass saw the angel of the Lord standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and the ass turned aside out of the way, and went into the field: and Balaam smote the ass,

to turn her into the way. But the angel of the Lord stood in a path of the vineyards, a wall being on this side, and a wall on that side. And when the ass saw the angel of the Lord, she thrust herself unto the wall, and crushed Balaam's foot against the wall: and he smote her again. And the angel of the Lord went further, and stood in a narrow place, where was no way to turn either to the right hand or to the left. And when the ass saw the angel of the Lord, she fell down under Balaam: and Balaam's anger was kindled, and he smote the ass with a staff. And the Lord opened the mouth of the ass, and she said unto Balaam, What have I done unto thee, that thou hast smitten me these three times? And Balaam said unto the ass, Because thou hast mocked me: I would there were a sword in mine hand, for now would I kill thee. And the ass said unto Balaam, Am not I thine ass, upon which thou hast ridden ever since I was thine unto this day? was I ever wont to do so unto thee? and he said, Nay. Then the Lord opened the eyes of Balaam, and he saw the angel of the Lord standing in the way, and his sword drawn in his hand: and he bowed down his head, and fell flat on his face. And the angel of the Lord said unto him, Wherefore hast thou smitten thine ass these three times? behold, I went out to withstand thee, because thy way is perverse before me: And the ass saw me, and turned from me these three times: unless she had turned from me, surely now also I had slain thee, and saved her alive. And Balaam said unto the angel of the Lord, I have sinned; for I knew not that thou stoodest in the way against me: now therefore, if it displease thee, I will get me back again. (Numbers 22:21-34)

Have you ever had something stop you from doing what you were doing? Did you get the hint, or did you resist and proceed anyway only to find out that you shouldn't have done what you did? Remember the scriptures were written for our learning.

I am going to give you an example of something that just happened to me two days ago. I was working on this chapter, and had just written an entire section that was about what happens when we cause our children to walk through the fire. You will be reading about it later. But I did this long write up on certain things, and as I was writing this, my laptop crashed on me twice. I had to restart it both times, sign into everything again, and if I hadn't saved what I wrote, I had to rewrite it.

This computer has done that before, but it has been a really long time. Well, just today I was thinking about it, and asked the Father if I needed to take certain things out of this chapter. The answer was yes. So, I did, and I have been working on this book for about six hours now with no problems. It was Him that crashed my computer, trying to tell me that He did not want what I was writing at the time it crashed, in the book.

Then you just read a chapter a bit ago that described how I was being taught that I was descending down into hell by not listening to the Bible. We will be describing lesson in more detail in the next chapter, but I had to go through what I went through, to understand how to show you all how I ascended and then descended before I ascended back into the heavenly places.

And then we need to listen to how God does not do unto us as we deserve.

The Lord is merciful and gracious, slow to anger, and plenteous in mercy. He will not always chide: neither will he keep his anger for ever. He hath not dealt with us after our sins; nor rewarded us according to our iniquities. For as the heaven is high above the earth, so great is his mercy toward them that fear him.
(Psalm 103:8-11)

And after all that is come upon us for our evil deeds,
and for our great trespass, seeing that thou our God
hast punished us less than our iniquities deserve, and
hast given us such deliverance as this; (Ezra 9:13)

And that he would shew thee the secrets of wisdom, that they are
double to that which is! Know therefore that God exacteth of thee less
than thine iniquity deserveth. (Job 11:6)

Then He promised that He would raise up one, that one being
me, to be a mediator for the world.

The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet
from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me;
unto him ye shall hearken; (Deuteronomy 18:15)

This mediator gives the world an understanding of our Father and His
works from the beginning to the time of the end. This mediator being
me. Now did He have to do this? No, of course not, but He did and
is still doing as He said He would do.

Now I say that He is still doing as He said He would do because
I personally know that I do not deserve it. Even after all this has
started with me, I have thrown some pretty harsh temper tantrums.
No, I have not eaten unclean things other than what I have told you
all about. No, I have not, nor will I celebrate any man-made holidays,
or honor those days in any way towards others. But I have told Him
that I quit several times. But He never gives up on me. I do not feel
that I am worthy of His love, His grace, His forgiveness, His mercy,
His patience, and His longsuffering.

Do not tell me that I should feel that I deserve to be done unto
better than He is doing unto me. Do not tell me that you deserve to
be done better unto than what is being done unto you. I know Him
and I know that you too, have transgressed His laws. You have sinned
against Him, but your still alive to read this book. That means He is
giving you a chance to learn of Him and His works as well. You are
doing better than you deserve as well.

PRECEPT SEVEN

If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness. If we say that we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us. (1 John 1:8-10)

Let us listen to a parable that tells us that we should never think highly of ourselves.

And he spake this parable unto certain which trusted in themselves that they were righteous, and despised others: Two men went up into the temple to pray; the one a Pharisee, and the other a publican. The Pharisee stood and prayed thus with himself, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men are, extortioners, unjust, adulterers, or even as this publican. I fast twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I possess. And the publican, standing afar off, would not lift up so much as his eyes unto heaven, but smote upon his breast, saying, God be merciful to me a sinner. I tell you, this man went down to his house justified rather than the other: for every one that exalteth himself shall be abased; and he that humbleth himself shall be exalted. (Luke 18:9-14)

Can you hear how the publican standing afar off, wouldn't even lift his eyes to heaven and said, God be merciful to me a sinner? Do you hear how this man will go down to his house justified rather than the one who thinks he is doing great, or justifies himself? How is thinking that you deserve to be done better unto than what is be done unto you, not exalting yourself?

Now we need to talk about how this servant was trying to force me to recognize a man-made holiday. We have already gone over how the Bible teaches against christmas, so we will not go over that again.

We are going to be looking at any and all man-made holidays and birthdays in which our Father never commanded us to celebrate. We are not going to brake each man-made holiday down, we will just be referring to them as man-made holidays, which is talking about all of them as a whole.

Okay to start this off, I am going to tell you all about something that I heard on a well-known late-night radio program one night. This was during the time in which I was focusing on listening to other things other than the Bible. As I was listening while I was driving, the person that they were interviewing had problems with the Bible. He stated that he did not understand how a man could nourish a child. I instantly understood how we men are supposed to nourish our children. I tried to call in, but as usual, to many other callers we on the line.

At this time, I wasn't sure and am still not sure of where the Bible shows that a man will nourish his children, but I still understood how to. I have shown you all that water, milk, honey, wine, bread, meat, and my flesh are all levels of knowledge. We are to desire the sincere milk of the word.

Wherefore laying aside all malice, and all guile, and hypocrisies, and envies, and all evil speakings, As newborn babes, desire the sincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby: (1 Peter 2:1-2)

We are to be teaching our children of God at all times. We are to be teaching our children the ways of God.

Now these are the commandments, the statutes, and the judgments, which the Lord your God commanded to teach you, that ye might do them in the land whither ye go to possess it: That thou mightest fear the Lord thy God, to keep all his statutes and his commandments, which I command thee, thou, and thy son, and thy son's son, all the days of thy life; and

that thy days may be prolonged. Hear therefore, O Israel, and observe to do it; that it may be well with thee, and that ye may increase mightily, as the Lord God of thy fathers hath promised thee, in the land that floweth with milk and honey. Hear, O Israel: The Lord our God is one Lord: And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy might. And these words, which I command thee this day, shall be in thine heart: And thou shalt teach them diligently unto thy children, and shalt talk of them when thou sittest in thine house, and when thou walkest by the way, and when thou liest down, and when thou risest up. (Deuteronomy 6:1-6)

Just a quick side note, our Father had me describe the first book that we wrote, as the sincere milk of the word, when we republished it. That is the book that introduces me and the rest of the world of all of the knowledge that comes in the books to follow.

Anyway, we are to teach are children the ways of God, but nowhere in the Bible are we told to celebrate birthdays and or man-made holidays. Just like physical food and water helps a child grow in the physical realm, the word helps a child grow spiritually. We are not to cause the children to walk through fire.

And thou shalt not let any of thy seed pass through the fire to Molech, neither shalt thou profane the name of thy God: I am the Lord. (Leviticus 18:21)

So, what is one doing when they teach their children to celebrate these days. Obviously, these days are not what God commanded, they are causing them to pass through fire. So, let us listen to what our Father will do to those that do things that He did not command.

For the children of Judah have done evil in my sight, saith the Lord: they have set their abominations in the house which is called by my name, to pollute it. And they have built the high places of Tophet, which is in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my heart. Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that it shall no more be called Tophet, nor the valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter: for they shall bury in Tophet, till there be no place. (Jeremiah 7:30-32)

They have built also the high places of Baal, to burn their sons with fire for burnt offerings unto Baal, which I commanded not, nor spake it, neither came it into my mind: Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that this place shall no more be called Tophet, nor The valley of the son of Hinnom, but The valley of slaughter. (Jeremiah 19:5-6)

And they built the high places of Baal, which are in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to cause their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire unto Molech; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my mind, that they should do this abomination, to cause Judah to sin. (Jeremiah 32:35)

One might ask, how is teaching our children to celebrate these days, causing them to walk through fire? Well because the children learn of these ways, which are not of God, they get stuck in celebrating them. And then when they have children, they teach them to celebrate days that God never commanded. And now because you have taught your children to do this, you have created a fire that God never commanded.

PRECEPT SEVEN

Now I have talked with people that tell me that they don't think saying things like merry christmas, happy birthday, happy new year, etc. is that bad. Even if you are not celebrating these days and saying such things, you are encouraging others to continue in their ways.

By encouraging others to continue to do such, I feel I would be attributing to creating this fire, and by doing this, I know the Father would stop doing what He is doing with me. Just listen to this.

And Nadab and Abihu, the sons of Aaron, took either of them his censer, and put fire therein, and put incense thereon, and offered strange fire before the Lord, which he commanded them not. And there went out fire from the Lord, and devoured them, and they died before the Lord. Then Moses said unto Aaron, This is it that the Lord spake, saying, I will be sanctified in them that come nigh me, and before all the people I will be glorified. And Aaron held his peace. (Leviticus 10:1-3)

God devoured the sons of Aaron because they caused a fire that God did not command. Then notice how God states that He will be sanctified in them that come near Him, and before all the people, He will be glorified. How is anyone glorifying our Father when they are doing something that He never commanded? I myself will not do anything less or more than our Father commanded. I will not encourage anyone to do less or more than He commanded, but at the same time, I will not stop anyone from doing less or more than He commanded.

What thing soever I command you, observe to do it: thou shalt not add thereto, nor diminish from it. (Deuteronomy 12:32)

I will not go to the left or the right of what He commands.

Ye shall observe to do therefore as the Lord your God hath commanded you: ye shall not turn aside to the right hand or to the left.(Deuteronomy 5:32)

Let thine eyes look right on, and let thine eyelids look straight before thee. Ponder the path of thy feet, and let all thy ways be established. Turn not to the right hand nor to the left: remove thy foot from evil. (Proverbs 4:25-27)

Only be thou strong and very courageous, that thou mayest observe to do according to all the law, which Moses my servant commanded thee: turn not from it to the right hand or to the left, that thou mayest prosper withersoever thou goest. (Joshua 1:7)

And I will not do as other people do. Because that is exactly what I am told to do.

And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, Speak unto the children of Israel, and say unto them, I am the Lord your God. After the doings of the land of Egypt, wherein ye dwelt, shall ye not do: and after the doings of the land of Canaan, whither I bring you, shall ye not do: neither shall ye walk in their ordinances. Ye shall do my judgments, and keep mine ordinances, to walk therein: I am the Lord your God. Ye shall therefore keep my statutes, and my judgments: which if a man do, he shall live in them: I am the Lord. (Leviticus 18:1-5)

Take heed to thyself that thou be not snared by following them, after that they be destroyed from before thee; and that thou enquire not after their gods, saying, How did these nations serve their gods? even

PRECEPT SEVEN

so will I do likewise. Thou shalt not do so unto the Lord thy God: for every abomination to the Lord, which he hateth, have they done unto their gods; for even their sons and their daughters they have burnt in the fire to their gods. (Deuteronomy 12:30-31)

I have told you all how I have seen this spiritual flood that covers the earth, and that flood's name is Egypt. We just went over how I am in the new heavens, and am in the new earth. We also just learned that I am in the Garden of Eden. I will not go back down into Egypt, or hell and try to please people by doing as they do.

Now when I tell you all this, I do not tell you this in vein. I have been through all of this myself. When I read the Bible for the first time, I heard that our Father never commanded us to celebrate birthdays and or man-made holidays. I stopped immediately, not only celebrating them, but I would not encourage them for anyone.

This took place just a few months before my daughter's birthday. She and her mother both got mad at me because they thought it was about me not wanting to buy presents for her. They stopped talking to me for the longest time. Then after some time, with me being persistent with the love that I show for all, they realized that it had nothing to do with buying anything, it was just me learning from our Father. Then they both realized that my love for them and all, is continuous and unconditional, all year long. They realized that they do not need a special day to feel important to me. Just as our Father does for all of His children. Which is everyone on the planet.

So, now that we have went through this lesson, I want to share with you what I told the Father the day He told me to write this chapter. I told Him that if He ever has another servant and or vessel be this persistent and try to force the ways of man on me. Now I am not talking about a couple of things being said, and then both parties just let it go, I am talking about trying to force me to seek the ways of man and not of God the same way I felt when this servant did this, I will tell them to their face, get thee behind me Satan for thou savourest the way of man and not of God. I will honor and glorify my

Father and I will continue to seek His perfection in everything that I do. I will not honor Satan and his ways.

Now with that being said, we need to talk about Jesus rebuking Peter and telling him to get behind me Satan.

And he began to teach them, that the Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders, and of the chief priests, and scribes, and be killed, and after three days rise again. And he spake that saying openly. And Peter took him, and began to rebuke him. But when he had turned about and looked on his disciples, he rebuked Peter, saying, Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but the things that be of men. (Mark 8:31-33)

From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples, how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be killed, and be raised again the third day. Then Peter took him, and began to rebuke him, saying, Be it far from thee, Lord: this shall not be unto thee. But he turned, and said unto Peter, Get thee behind me, Satan: thou art an offence unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men. (Matthew 16:21-23)

How did Peter all the sudden become Satan, even though he is foretold to be a disciple? It is not because Peter all of a sudden changed into some kind of devilish looking character. It is not because Satan was behind him, or anywhere close to him. It is because Peter was and is a man in the flesh. As we have showed in previous books, Satan is the flesh. The flesh is profitable for nothing.

PRECEPT SEVEN

It is the spirit that quickeneth; the flesh profiteth nothing: the words that I speak unto you, they are spirit, and they are life. (John 6:63)

Now why did Jesus rebuke Peter? It was because Peter thought that Jesus should not die. Isn't that the way it is with man now? Man thinks we should do whatever we can to stay alive as long as we can.

I have been showing you all since the third book, Satan is man, or the flesh. It is our bellies in which Satan was cast to. And that we all are partakers of the beast. So, let us listen to a few times we are told that those that try to save their life, will lose their life.

For whosoever will save his life shall lose it; but whosoever shall lose his life for my sake and the gospel's, the same shall save it. (Mark 8:35)

He that findeth his life shall lose it: and he that loseth his life for my sake shall find it. (Matthew 10:39)

For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it. (Luke 9:24)

Whosoever shall seek to save his life shall lose it; and whosoever shall lose his life shall preserve it. (Luke 17:33)

How can one save their life and lose it at the same time? Remember we are in Satan's kingdom. When we try to save our life in the flesh, we lose our eternal life with the Father. That is why we are told not to love the things of this world, the ways of this world, or this world.

Love not the world, neither the things that are in the world. If any man love the world, the love of the Father is not in him. For all that is in the world, the lust of the flesh, and the lust of the eyes, and the

pride of life, is not of the Father, but is of the world.
(1 John 2:15-16)

And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God. (Romans 12:2)

If ye then be risen with Christ, seek those things which are above, where Christ sitteth on the right hand of God. Set your affection on things above, not on things on the earth. (Colossians 3:1-2)

Why would we be told not to love this world, and or the things of this world? Because this is Satan's kingdom

In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, lest the light of the glorious gospel of Christ, who is the image of God, should shine unto them. (2 Corinthians 4:4)

And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. (Luke 4:5-7)

Again, the devil taketh him up into an exceeding high mountain, and sheweth him all the kingdoms of the world, and the glory of them; And saith unto him, All these things will I give thee, if thou wilt fall down and worship me. (Matthew 4:8-9)

How can Satan tell Jesus that he will give him all the kingdoms of the world, if this world is not his? And in this world, there is no eternal life with the Father. So, when we try to save our life while we are here in Satan's kingdom, we are spiritually telling the Father that we would rather be here in Satan's kingdom, rather than being with Him.

So, now we need to talk about some ways that people try to save their life. The first thing we are going to be talking about how some people go far and beyond to try to stay here longer.. Man has been and is trying to figure out some way to live forever. There are some people that have even tried to freeze themselves so they can live in the future or something like that.

What is it called when you freeze your body to stay alive?

Cryonics, commonly known as cryogenic freezing, is a process that involves preserving human bodies at extremely low temperatures with the hope of potentially restoring them to life and health in the future. Jun 2, 2023 Cryogenic Freezing: Can We Freeze Humans for the Future? Mirage News<https://www.miragenews.com> › cryogenic-freezing-ca.

There are some people that are trying to figure out how we can live on other planets. When one first thinks about that, one might think that they are trying to get away from hell. But that is not what they are doing, they are wanting to live on another planet because they know that this planet will not be survivable in the future. In other words, they do not want to die. And I will say it, the only way we can keep from dying is by listening to every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.

But now let us talk about the more common things people do to try to save their lives. We just read a bit ago about how it is our Father that creates each of us just from a little liquid of a man going into a woman. It is the Father that creates all the organs, bones, blood, etc. in the human body. But we need to remember that our Father also said that He would bring illnesses upon us.

If thou wilt not observe to do all the words of this law that are written in this book, that thou mayest fear this glorious and fearful name, The Lord Thy God; Then the Lord will make thy plagues wonderful, and the plagues of thy seed, even great plagues, and of long continuance, and sore sicknesses, and of long continuance. Moreover he will bring upon thee all the diseases of Egypt, which thou wast afraid of; and they shall cleave unto thee. Also every sickness, and every plague, which is not written in the book of this law, them will the Lord bring upon thee, until thou be destroyed. (Deuteronomy 58:58-61)

This is another topic that was brought up in the first book, and now I know why. I have written about this in the past, but I have never connected it like I am now. We should always be seeking our Father's will and not our own.

Go to now, ye that say, To day or to morrow we will go into such a city, and continue there a year, and buy and sell, and get gain: Whereas ye know not what shall be on the morrow. For what is your life? It is even a vapour, that appeareth for a little time, and then vanisheth away. For that ye ought to say, If the Lord will, we shall live, and do this, or that. (James 4:13-15)

Forasmuch then as Christ hath suffered for us in the flesh, arm yourselves likewise with the same mind: for he that hath suffered in the flesh hath ceased from sin; That he no longer should live the rest of his time in the flesh to the lusts of men, but to the will of God. (1 Peter 4:1-2)

PRECEPT SEVEN

Servants, be obedient to them that are your masters according to the flesh, with fear and trembling, in singleness of your heart, as unto Christ; Not with eyeservice, as menpleasers; but as the servants of Christ, doing the will of God from the heart; (Ephesians 6:5-6)

For it is God which worketh in you both to will and to do of his good pleasure. (Philippians 2:13)

It is the Father that created you and all that is in you. It is the Father's will if you come down with some kind of life-threatening illness. Now think about this, we just read how He said that He would bring plagues, sicknesses, and diseases. I mean it is Him that worketh in you. This also means that He can keep them away as well.

And the Lord will take away from thee all sickness, and will put none of the evil diseases of Egypt, which thou knowest, upon thee; but will lay them upon all them that hate thee. (Deuteronomy 7:15)

Then it should be His will as to whether or not you live or die, right? It is Him that created your organs, so if they quit, it is His will. He created your bones, so if they don't serve the purpose that they are supposed to, it is His will. If you develop cancer, it is His will. There's the problem, it is His will and not yours. But many people don't think about it being His will. The power in the air is telling everyone that we should all try to live as long as we can, giving no regard to what the scriptures teach. And if we were to try to stay alive as long as possible, we would not be told that exercise profiteth little.

For bodily exercise profiteth little: but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come. (1 Timothy 4:8)

Just a side note here. Remember me telling you all about my brother telling me I couldn't be right with God because I smoked. Then the Father had me tell him that if I put these cigarettes down to try and save my life, I would lose it with the Father. There have been people that have lived to be a hundred years old, smoked all their life, and had no problems. You're not going to get cancer if the Father does not will it. But if He does will it, you will get it no matter what.

So, many will have, organ transplants, bone marrow transplant, blood transfusions, get vaccinated, and among other things in the hopes of staying alive. These all sound like they would be safe things that we can do, but when we do this, we are losing our eternal life with the Father.

When we do these things, we are taking the mark of the beast. It is not any kind of computer implant into our bodies. It is not going to be a tattoo, or anything that physically marks you. It is going to what is in your mind and done by your hand with your works. Them being the works of love for God. Remember how we showed what the number of the beast is. If not, let us listen to this again.

Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six. (Revelation 13:18)

And to verify that man is the beast, we need to listen to how some will be the head, and some will be the tail. And then we will listen to when we are being told the same thing in the New Testament, but with a different description.

For the people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither do they seek the Lord of hosts. Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail. For the leaders of this people cause them

to err; and they that are led of them are destroyed. Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for every one is an hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaketh folly. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 9:13-17)

Whosoever therefore shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, he shall be called the least in the kingdom of heaven: but whosoever shall do and teach them, the same shall be called great in the kingdom of heaven. (Matthew 5:19)

Some will be the head of this beast, and some will be the tail of this beast. Some will be the greatest in the kingdom heaven, and some will be the least.

As you can see, it is the number of a man, and his number is Six hundred threescore and six. Six hundred sixty-six is what that comes to be. So, now we need to listen to the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36-40)

Remember how we are to worship God in spirit and truth? This mark is spiritual as well. When a man chooses not to love God with all their heart, is one six. When a man chooses not to love God with all their soul, is the second six. When a man chooses not to love God with all their mind, is the third six. And they all coincide. If one does

not love God with all their heart, they naturally will not love Him with all their soul or mind either.

Now when we mentioned vaccination as one of the things one does to save their life, we are not talking all vaccinations. I am not sure, but I do not think when a baby gets vaccinated, this would be the mark. This baby has no choice or say so in the matter. I am not ever sure if the vaccines a child gets are that big of a deal. The vaccinations that I am talking about is like the ones they were giving out for the Covid-19

Yes, if you got the vaccination shot for Covid, you took the mark. You didn't put your trust into the Father to keep you from the illness. You trusted what man said.

Thus saith the Lord; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the Lord. (Jeremiah 17:5)

It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in man. (Psalm 118:8)

Now let us talk about blood transfusions. Why would getting a blood transfusion be taking the mark. Just like the organs and bones that God created in you, He also created the same for each person. When one gets a blood transfusion, they take someone else's life from them. I am not talking about a person's physical life, but rather the life as our Father describes it.

And whatsoever man there be of the house of Israel, or of the strangers that sojourn among you, that eateth any manner of blood; I will even set my face against that soul that eateth blood, and will cut him off from among his people. For the life of the flesh is in the blood: and I have given it to you upon the altar to make an atonement for your souls: for it is

the blood that maketh an atonement for the soul.
(Leviticus 17:10-11)

I know this is talking about eating blood, so why would this also be talking about blood transfusions? Why do you eat food? You eat so that your body can absorb the nutrients to help you live. When you get a blood transfusion, you are doing the same thing as digesting blood from another person. Then take note of how we are told that the life of the flesh is in the blood, and that the blood is given to us upon the altar to make an atonement for our souls. So, what is the life of the flesh?

Jesus saith unto him, I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me.
(John 14:6)

Our blood is what makes us all part of the One Son of God. When we use someone else's blood, we are using their blood which takes away some of their atonement. And their blood will not be an atonement for you. I quit giving blood so long ago now that I cannot remember the last time. I know it was before the Father called me to the Bible in 2011. The last time I had my license renewed, I had them remove the organ doner mark. I do remember this and I did this for this purpose. I will not make a fire of any sort that our Father did not command.

It is unfortunate for some to learn this, but this is why we hear things like this.

For the mystery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth will let, until he be taken out of the way. And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming:

Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. (2 Thessalonians 2:7-10)

Now I am not a doctor, or have any kind of medical knowledge. But because of what I have known for years about the Bible, I do not go to a doctor, other than for a D. O. T physical every other year. I don't trust them. It seems if you have a runny nose, they think you need all kinds of medicines.

Go up into Gilead, and take balm, O virgin, the daughter of Egypt: in vain shalt thou use many medicines; for thou shalt not be cured. (Jeremiah 46:11)

For I am with thee, saith the Lord, to save thee: though I make a full end of all nations whither I have scattered thee, yet I will not make a full end of thee: but I will correct thee in measure, and will not leave thee altogether unpunished. For thus saith the Lord, Thy bruise is incurable, and thy wound is grievous. There is none to plead thy cause, that thou mayest be bound up: thou hast no healing medicines. (Jeremiah 30:11-13)

Even when I had the incident in May of 2022. This is when I passed out behind the wheel while driving at almost seventy mph. The paramedics arrived and took my vitals and asked me if I wanted to go to the hospital. I told them no. I truly put all my trust into our Father.

He is the one that told my conscience where to go. He told me what supplements to take. These supplements helped me lose weight and get my blood pressure regulated. He is the one that led me to the jobs that I needed to help me lose weight. He is the one that told me to switch to menthol cigarettes to help clean the congestion out of my

PRECEPT SEVEN

chest. I rely on the Father for everything, and He lets me know that is what He wants from me.

Then shortly after the incident, I realized that if I had still been unconscious when the paramedics arrived, they would have taken me to the hospital and did whatever they could have to save my life. So, I ordered a do not resuscitate necklace and bracelet. Then when I took my D. O. T. physical to get recertified, the doctor saw the medical bracelet, asking me what that was about. I told him so he put it on my physical exam report. And being a truck driver, we are required to put our medical exams on our Driver's license. So, now if there is ever any incident like that again, everybody will know not try to save me. And with me wearing this DNR on my neck and wrist, I am telling the world, get thee behind me Satan, I savourest the ways of God and not of man.

Becoming The Victim

This is going to be an interesting chapter. We are going to be talking about the year or so that I didn't listen to the Bible as often as I did for the first five years after the baptism. I had thought that the lesson was over when we got those two chapters done. But as I was driving the other day, listening to the Bible, our Father put something on my conscience. He let me know that I was becoming the victim during this time. And it did not take long to figure out that He wanted me to do a chapter on this.

Now when I say becoming a victim, this does not mean that someone was out to get me, but because I was not realizing that I was going through a lesson, I was allowing myself to become the victim. Let us explain.

I have told you all that I have listened to the Bible well over fifty times. I have been telling you all that for quite some time now because I don't count. Back when our Father first baptized me, I couldn't stop. I would listen to it from Genesis all the way through the book of Revelation. This would take me less than three weeks, then I would start all over with Genesis. I did this close to five years with a slow down when the Covid-19 hit because the Father did tell me to keep up on current events. A lot of those events are talked about in the fourth book, Jesus is here.

I wouldn't listen when I was stopped for a break, sleeping, or getting work done on the truck. I would usually only listen while I was driving. Back when I used to try and figure out how many times I had listened to it, I would do the math. Fifty-two weeks in a year divided by three. So, I am guessing that I listened to it at least seventeen times

a year for a solid four years, and probably only ten or twenty times in the fifth and sixth. Well over fifty by the time of the incident in 2022.

And I was on cloud nine all the time. If I got upset about anything, it only lasted a few minutes. I spent a good few years, feeling like a spoiled little brat. And I was so eager to learn all that I was learning. I didn't care worry about anything, including my health. I started to ignore my health by eating steak and fires three or four times a week. I wouldn't have any problem eating fast food, even right before I went to bed. I started putting on weight thinking that I didn't care because I knew and know that I will never be with another woman again. I was just going to enjoy the perks of life while I am doing what I need to do for the Father.

Then I had the incident to where I passed out in my truck as I was driving. When this happened, I started to get mad a God because I didn't die. I just lost my job, yea they told me that they would take me back after I got recertified, but I knew my health wasn't that good. I just lost my job, and had no idea of what I was going to do. I mean, I did and do not have a house to go to, now I didn't have a job, so what in the heck was I going to do.

Then the Father told me to get to where my daughter and her mother live. So, I rented a U-Haul, grabbed a few things out of the truck and headed that way. So, the next week or so went by with them watching me go into a coughing fit, and pass out three or four times a day. Now everybody that lives there knows that there is absolutely no way I am going to a doctor for anything other than my D. O. T physical. My daughter had some breathing treatments that she had gotten for her daughter that she wasn't using anymore. They had put my granddaughter on a different breathing treatment by this time. So, I started doing these treatments three or four times a day in the hopes that it would help with the congestion I had in my chest.

Then I started to take certain supplements and do some exercises. It was rough going at first, but after a couple of weeks, I started to feel a lot better. Then the Father led me to the first job I had while I was there. It paid decent, and required a decent amount of physical activity. I figured this would help a lot with getting recertified. Then

a job became available that paid even better and required a lot more physical activity. But I had to get my D. O. T physical to go to work for this company.

Now I had been taking a few different supplements that our Father put on my conscience and had lost almost forty pounds at this time. So, when I took the physical, the doctor said I was in perfect health. Honestly, I was a little shocked because my blood pressure had never been that low before. Then I took that job and lost an additional twenty pounds over the next couple of months. Then halloween was coming around, and the people that I was staying with started to put up decorations. I knew that was the sign for me to go back on the road because I will not have anything to do with man-made holidays, as explained in the last chapter.

I came to work with this company in October of 2022, and as explained in the last book, the Father put me in this blue and white truck. The truck does not have a CD player in it so I had to listen to the Bible on my phone as it was hooked up to my stereo. That worked until I got a portable CD player to hook up to my stereo. So, I am thinking that I listened to it a couple times by the end of that year. Then through hearing Him by the traffic and such. He was having servants cut me off, slow me down, brake check me, and other things. These things were happening while I was driving, and listening to the Bible. I couldn't figure out why He was doing this. Usually this means a traffic jam is coming, I need to change lanes, I need to take a different route, but everything was fine. So, I figured that He wanted me to quit listening to the Bible, and listen to the news or something.

Then after listening to the news for a while, I started hearing things that just didn't line up with what was really going on in the world. They just seemed to be focused on getting people to think one way, and it just seemed like there was nothing worth listening to. So, then I started to listen to certain rock and roll, comedy, and other radio shows. But then it would seem that the Father would start doing the same thing with the traffic. I felt like He was telling me to stop listening to that.

I would get tired of that, so I would put the Bible back on. But after listening for so long, it just seemed the Father was telling me to quit listening to that. I started to develop this, I guess you could say complex, and as time went on, it was getting worse. I started throwing what I man sized temper tantrums. I would start screaming at Him. But I would keep trying to listen to the Bible, switching back and forth between the Bible and XM radio. Then it got to the point of when I felt like He was telling to stop doing what I am doing, no matter what I was doing, that one of those times I was listening to the Bible, I took the cd out of the player and snapped it.

In that moment, I figured I would make sure that I couldn't listen to it anymore. Needless to say, the guilt took over immediately. I had an extra cd set in the truck because of burning out two sets from listening all the time. So, it took a couple of days, but I started to try and listen again. Then I ordered a couple more cd sets of the Bible to keep in the truck. Then I can't even say for sure when it happened, but I stopped listening to the Bible all together. I had just made up my mind that maybe the Father was telling me to stop because I am always meditating on the scriptures anyway.

We talked about that in the last book, but now I started to listen to videos and such that covered more in-depth news. I started to let myself think that I needed to listen to those now to keep up on current events. But the same things were happening with the traffic. I just kept feeling like the Father was telling me to quit doing that also.

It got to the point that I would scream at Him, tell Him that I didn't want to do this anymore. I started telling Him that I think He hated me and that maybe I was going through all of this because of something that I did in my last life. By this time, I was not listening to the Bible anymore. I had gotten to the point that I felt that needed to call Cathy on a daily basis to check on my daughter and grand babies. Also, to just let off some steam.

There was a time that it got so bad, that I started to think I was supposed to take my own life. I felt like He was telling not to listen to the Bible, not to listen to the news, and even started thinking that He was telling me not to meditate on the scriptures. I started thinking

that it seems you don't want me to listen to the Bible. It seems you don't want me to listen to the news, it seems you don't want me listening to music. I started questioning what it is you want me to do? I can't get a house, I can't be with a woman, the only think I can figure is that you want me to quit driving. So, if I quit driving, there is nothing left to do but take my life.

I would complain to her about how I was feeling, hoping that this would make me feel better, but it didn't. Now she runs a home daycare center, and is busy all hours of the day. But I would get mad if she didn't answer the phone, or if she did, it would bother me that she was constantly distracted. It got to the point that I felt like I was talking to myself when I was talking to her. I was now letting anything and everything bother me. It got to the point that I started to think that maybe I had written enough books now, so maybe I am just supposed to wait to die. I even got to the point that I would think I would do it myself if the Father wasn't going to let me die.

I told the Father on numerous times, that I quit, I do not want to be your son anymore. But at no time would I eat the unclean things. Now I am going to tell you all how seriously I take not eating the unclean things. And I am doing this because I was talking to the Father about this last night. There was a time that I used to get chicken salads at the Loves truck stop chain. Put them in my refrigerator in the truck to eat when I am on break. Then one I decided to look at the ingredients. Never crossed my mind that they would have pork in a chicken salad. Then I noticed that one of the ingredients said that it contained rib meat. At first, I thought they wouldn't put pork rib meat in with chicken. So, I googled it, but all I could find was that rib meat could be pork, beef, or chicken rib meat. But the ingredients do not specify what kind of rib meat it is, so I will not eat it because I am not positive of what kind of rib meat it is.

At no time would I be around anyone for birthdays or holidays. I would still listen to the verse of the day wrap every day, twice. I would still talk to the Father all day even though I was thinking that now He is out to get me for something that I did in the past. Now I am not going to be able to tell you all that I went through, but this gives

you all a general idea. But at the same time, I knew I was in hard core, one on one, hands on training with the Father, but I just didn't think this was a lesson because the lessons He teaches me only take a few days. Maybe a week or two, but not this long. Let me post something in the Bible that shows how I was feeling.

O lord God of my salvation, I have cried day and night before thee: Let my prayer come before thee: incline thine ear unto my cry; For my soul is full of troubles: and my life draweth nigh unto the grave. I am counted with them that go down into the pit: I am as a man that hath no strength: Free among the dead, like the slain that lie in the grave, whom thou rememberest no more: and they are cut off from thy hand. Thou hast laid me in the lowest pit, in darkness, in the deeps. Thy wrath lieth hard upon me, and thou hast afflicted me with all thy waves. Selah. Thou hast put away mine acquaintance far from me; thou hast made me an abomination unto them: I am shut up, and I cannot come forth. Mine eye mourneth by reason of affliction: Lord, I have called daily upon thee, I have stretched out my hands unto thee. Wilt thou shew wonders to the dead? shall the dead arise and praise thee? Selah. Shall thy lovingkindness be declared in the grave? or thy faithfulness in destruction? Shall thy wonders be known in the dark? and thy righteousness in the land of forgetfulness? But unto thee have I cried, O Lord; and in the morning shall my prayer prevent thee. Lord, why castest thou off my soul? why hidest thou thy face from me? I am afflicted and ready to die from my youth up: while I suffer thy terrors I am distracted. Thy fierce wrath goeth over me; thy terrors have cut me off. They came round about me daily like water; they compassed me about together.

Lover and friend hast thou put far from me, and mine acquaintance into darkness. (Psalm 88:1-18)

Then the war broke out in October of last year and as soon as I heard about it, the Father brought my attention to what the Bible says when you see Jerusalem surrounded.

And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. (Luke 21:20)

I started to think that this was Him getting ready to reveal me, but I wasn't listening to the Bible. Then sometime in November, I started to watch something, and this guy was saying that there was going to be a rapture soon, and I lost it. I couldn't stand how this guy was saying this because I know what that teaching does to people.

So, I made a YouTube video that day. We will be talking about that in a few chapters, but as I was doing this video, the Father taught me a lesson. I guess I can't say He taught me a full lesson, but He got me started on a big lesson in real time on that video. Shortly after that, I realized that we were going to be writing another book, this one. I knew what the name of it was going to be, so I started to think that I needed to go to Alaska to get some pictures of the Northern Lights. This just seemed like it would fit with the title.

Then something horrible happened. I had gotten to the point that I was in a bad mood all the time. I didn't take it out on others, but I wouldn't put the feelings of others in front of mine. I had asked Livia about having the books in the London Bookfair again this year. She told me that they were not doing the London Fair this year, but rather they were going to be in the book fair in Las Angeles. Well, I felt the Father was putting it on my conscience to ask about the London bookfair, so I asked about having the books at the bookfair in Las Angeles

She said that we could do that, but she needed to find out more details about it. She called me the next day to tell me the details

and the cost, and then I asked her if it would be possible to have the seventh book at the fair as well. She told me that she would have to check with everyone in the office to see if it was possible because the fair is in April.

Then the next day she called me to tell me that she had to jump through some loops to be able to get it done. Then she told me that she would email the prices for this. When she emailed me the prices, she also included the cost of the publishing package. When I first saw this, I knew right away that I was not going to be able to pay for both with the check I was getting later that day. I sent her an email telling her that I couldn't pay, but I didn't state clearly that I couldn't pay both at the same time. I know I did this because I was more focused on what was going on with me.

She called me the next day and I could tell she was about in tears. I don't know her personally and have never met her, but this made me feel less than two inches tall. She thought I was saying I wasn't going to go through having this book in the show. I think she even thought I was trying to back out of the bookfair altogether.

She was telling me how she had to jump through loops, call certain people to set up a rush publish because it normally takes three months after submitting a manuscript, to get it published. She got all this arranged and then she thought I was telling her that I wasn't going to do it. I felt so bad, and I told her I think I miscommunicated what I was trying to say. I told her that I was not backing out of something that I asked for. She didn't ask me, I am the one that brought up the whole idea about the bookfair, but because I was more concerned about what I was going through, I didn't take the time to make sure that I got the point across. I told her to take one payment for the fair this week, and we can do the publishing package the following week. I could just hear how relieved she was. It was then that I knew something had to change with me.

Then as the Father was telling me to do this chapter, He told me to think about how I felt like I had become a victim. I thought about it for a bit, and realized how it was so subtle that I convinced myself that I didn't need to listen to the Bible anymore. How I started to

put myself in front of what needed to be done. The truth is that I had gotten myself ahead of Him so many times, that I felt that I should have been revealed by now. I had started some time ago, to make it about me and not about Him and everyone else.

Now I must be honest with you all, when the Father told me to do this chapter, I had no idea where it was going. I wrote all but the first paragraph this morning while my trailer was being unloaded, not really sure where it was going. Then the day got pretty busy, I had to drive two-hundred-fifty miles to get my next load. Now I am heading back out to Idaho, but to a different town. I had seven hours left on my clock, so I just figured I would get five or six hours down the road. Right after I started the second stretch of the day, I almost called Cathy back, we had talked on the phone for a few minutes earlier. Then I thought within myself, no, I want to go back into the heavens, so I chose to listen to the Bible. Well as I am driving and listening to the Bible, the Father and I started to have a conversation. This conversation lasted over three hours. I am even going to tell you all how these conversations work, because He is not another person.

I will be driving, or doing anything, but mainly driving. And now that I am listening to the Bible again, I am having a lot of conversations with Him. But as I am driving, I will start to think of how I might tell someone something about the Bible. I start talking aloud, why not, I am in the truck by myself. Well, I am not by myself in the spiritual perspective, but am in the physical perspective. Then while this is going on, He will put questions on my mind, and I usually have to work through it, but answer the question aloud. Before anyone tries to say that I am crazy or something, let me remind you of something.

But without faith it is impossible to please him: for he that cometh to God must believe that he is, and that he is a rewarder of them that diligently seek him.
(Hebrews 11:6)

Then when I am working through things, I am reflecting on things that I have heard in the scriptures. So, what I am going to do now, is try and put this lesson to you all in the same way that He had me work through it. I am not going to post word for word, which would probably be a book itself. But I am going to try to give you a general line of questioning as He did with me. And then I will tell you what I came up with after working though the questions.

It starts out with Him asking me when I completely quit listening to the Bible. My response was right after we wrote the sixth book. Not after the sixth book was published, but when I submitted the manuscript. So, why did you quit listening to the Bible, He ask. I tell Him because I thought I had written enough books, and revealed a ton of secrets that have been kept since the foundation of the world. I told Him that you had me show everyone how I was sitting on your right side in the heavenly places in that book. I started to think that if I am in the heavenly places sitting on your right side, I didn't need to listen anymore because my mind is always on the scriptures.

Then He asked me how I started to treat Him. Well Father I was being mean and cruel. I was calling you names and saying you didn't love me. I was telling you that I didn't want to do this anymore. I was mad at you because you hadn't revealed me yet so I would tell you that I was just going to take my own life if your not going to. Then I started to tell you that I was going to get my hair cut and shave off my beard. I even started to tell you that maybe I should just find a harlot and be with a woman, even though I knew and know that there is no marriage in the resurrection. I even said that maybe I should become gay, even though I knew and know that isn't the way you designed us. I know that when you gave us the first commandments of be fruitful, multiply, and replenish the earth was you saying make my family bigger. And I know that when a man is with a man, or woman is with a woman, they cannot make your family bigger. I was just thinking of ways to get you to take my life. Then He tells me that we both know that you won't do any of that because you have done more than tasted of the heavenly gift. I told Him that He is right because there is absolutely no way that I will truly betray you.

And as you know Father, I would not stop wearing the fringes that you tell me to make and place on the four corners of my garments. I even made a new set for the trip to Alaska. I have, and probably will again, thrown some fits, but I will not dishonor you Father. Then He asked me if I remember how it was when we were writing the first book. Of course, I remember Father, which was such a wild ride, metaphorically speaking.

At that time, I was with my wife that I had at that time, and we lived in a log cabin out in the boon docks. We had a pond with a boat dock. I would go out there every night that I could and just talk to you. I remember how ecstatic I was. I remember promising you that I would do whatever you wanted me to do, no matter how long it took. Do you remember what I told you that one day in the shower. Yes Father, you told me that Satan gets us through our thought process. I remember well because I got so excited that I practically ran out of the bathroom to tell Pam.

Then He told me to think about how I was always getting mad at others when things didn't go the way I wanted them to. Oh boy, I got mad at all of your servants that were only driving their vehicles. I would scream at them from inside my truck with the windows rolled up. Knowing that I was actually screaming at you because you are in everybody. I got mad if Cathy and my daughter couldn't make time to talk to me when I wanted to talk. Even though Cathy runs a daycare, and my daughter has her fifth child on the way. They are both remarkably busy. I would not take my anger out on them, but I would you. I started cursing, I started to profane your name Father. To put it frankly, I treated you like dog dung Father. And then I would use the excuse that I am supposed to hate my life, and I got that down pat.

I even started to question if everything that you taught me is real. I started to question if I was a false Christ. I started to think that I was a false prophet even though there had been some things that you had me say would happen, happened. I started to think that I was being punished for something that I had done, instead of asking you what was going on. I started to feel like you were not there anymore. I truly started to feel like I didn't deserve your love at all.

The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a Prophet from the midst of thee, of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken; According to all that thou desiredst of the Lord thy God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, Let me not hear again the voice of the Lord my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, that I die not. And the Lord said unto me, They have well spoken that which they have spoken. I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, like unto thee, and will put my words in his mouth; and he shall speak unto them all that I shall command him. And it shall come to pass, that whosoever will not hearken unto my words which he shall speak in my name, I will require it of him. But the prophet, which shall presume to speak a word in my name, which I have not commanded him to speak, or that shall speak in the name of other gods, even that prophet shall die. And if thou say in thine heart, How shall we know the word which the Lord hath not spoken? When a prophet speaketh in the name of the Lord, if the thing follow not, nor come to pass, that is the thing which the Lord hath not spoken, but the prophet hath spoken it presumptuously: thou shalt not be afraid of him.(Deuteronomy 18:15-22)

I started to think because I got some things wrong, you counted them to be lies. And I started to think that because of that and all the anger that I had built up, you were done with me. The I told Him that I would question if I was really Jesus because I remembered how the scriptures teach when Jesus was reviled, there was no guile in my mouth. But I was reviling and there was definitely guile in my mouth.

For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: Who did no sin, neither was

guile found in his mouth: Who, when he was reviled, reviled not again; when he suffered, he threatened not; but committed himself to him that judgeth righteously: Who his own self bare our sins in his own body on the tree, that we, being dead to sins, should live unto righteousness: by whose stripes ye were healed. (1Peter 2:21-24)

Then He tells my conscience to think about where the scriptures teach that Jesus was tempted by devil.

And Jesus being full of the Holy Ghost returned from Jordan, and was led by the Spirit into the wilderness, Being forty days tempted of the devil. And in those days he did eat nothing: and when they were ended, he afterward hungered. And the devil said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, command this stone that it be made bread. And Jesus answered him, saying, It is written, That man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word of God. And the devil, taking him up into an high mountain, shewed unto him all the kingdoms of the world in a moment of time. And the devil said unto him, All this power will I give thee, and the glory of them: for that is delivered unto me; and to whomsoever I will I give it. If thou therefore wilt worship me, all shall be thine. And Jesus answered and said unto him, Get thee behind me, Satan: for it is written, Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only shalt thou serve. And he brought him to Jerusalem, and set him on a pinnacle of the temple, and said unto him, If thou be the Son of God, cast thyself down from hence: For it is written, He shall give his angels charge over thee, to keep thee: And in their hands they shall bear thee up, lest at any time thou dash thy foot against a stone. And

PRECEPT SEVEN

Jesus answering said unto him, It is said, Thou shalt not tempt the Lord thy God. And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season. (Luke 4:1-13)

My first response is that I went through the same fast. Then He tells me to think about how I had put in some of the books, how could the devil move Jesus to all of these areas, in what seemed to be instantaneously. Then He tells me to think about how we have been showing that man is Satan in the last few books. Okay, yea the flesh is Satan is my reply.

Then He tells me to think about what I said about the serpent in the beginning of the Bible. Yea, he is more subtil than any beast that you created.

Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? (Genesis 3:1)

Then He tells me to think about how He hates it when people listen to their imagination and not Him.

These six things doth the Lord hate: yea, seven are an abomination unto him: A proud look, a lying tongue, and hands that shed innocent blood, An heart that deviseth wicked imaginations, feet that be swift in running to mischief, A false witness that speaketh lies, and he that soweth discord among brethren. (Proverbs 6:16-19)

And God saw that the wickedness of man was great in the earth, and that every imagination of the thoughts of his heart was only evil continually. (Genesis 6:5)

Lest there should be among you man, or woman, or family, or tribe, whose heart turneth away this day from the Lord our God, to go and serve the gods of these nations; lest there should be among you a root that beareth gall and wormwood; And it come to pass, when he heareth the words of this curse, that he bless himself in his heart, saying, I shall have peace, though I walk in the imagination of mine heart, to add drunkenness to thirst:(Deuteronomy 29:18-19)

Then He asked me, who told you to stop listening to the Bible, it wasn't me. My first response was I just quit because you hadn't revealed me. He then said, who told you that I should have revealed you already? And after working through it for a bit, I said I guess it was the serpent. Then He asked me if he had physically told me this. Well of course not Father, this is all spiritual.

Then He ask, so what was it that told you that I should have revealed you by now. What told you that I was out to get you? What told you that I didn't love you? What told you that it is okay to prophane my name? What told you that you didn't deserve my love? What told you to put your own problems if front of others? After this goes on for a while, I say okay, it was my imagination, I am sorry.

Then it hit me like a ton of bricks as I was driving. Now I understand how the serpent is more subtil than any beast that our Father created. My jaw dropped and if I wouldn't have been buckled in my seat, I would have jumped out of it. I couldn't believe what I just learned. The serpent is our imagination. That makes so much since, just think about it. Listen to when Eve was beguiled by the serpent. Well actually, I am going to post the entire chapter because it all makes a lot more since now.

Now the serpent was more subtil than any beast of the field which the Lord God had made. And he said unto the woman, Yea, hath God said, Ye shall not eat of every tree of the garden? And the woman said unto

the serpent, We may eat of the fruit of the trees of the garden: But of the fruit of the tree which is in the midst of the garden, God hath said, Ye shall not eat of it, neither shall ye touch it, lest ye die. And the serpent said unto the woman, Ye shall not surely die: For God doth know that in the day ye eat thereof, then your eyes shall be opened, and ye shall be as gods, knowing good and evil. And when the woman saw that the tree was good for food, and that it was pleasant to the eyes, and a tree to be desired to make one wise, she took of the fruit thereof, and did eat, and gave also unto her husband with her; and he did eat. And the eyes of them both were opened, and they knew that they were naked; and they sewed fig leaves together, and made themselves aprons. And they heard the voice of the Lord God walking in the garden in the cool of the day: and Adam and his wife hid themselves from the presence of the Lord God amongst the trees of the garden. And the Lord God called unto Adam, and said unto him, Where art thou? And he said, I heard thy voice in the garden, and I was afraid, because I was naked; and I hid myself. And he said, Who told thee that thou wast naked? Hast thou eaten of the tree, whereof I commanded thee that thou shouldest not eat? And the man said, The woman whom thou gavest to be with me, she gave me of the tree, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the woman, What is this that thou hast done? And the woman said, The serpent beguiled me, and I did eat. And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life: And I will put enmity between thee and the woman, and between thy seed and her seed; it shall bruise thy head, and

thou shalt bruise his heel. Unto the woman he said, I will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And unto Adam he said, Because thou hast hearkened unto the voice of thy wife, and hast eaten of the tree, of which I commanded thee, saying, Thou shalt not eat of it: cursed is the ground for thy sake; in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return. And Adam called his wife's name Eve; because she was the mother of all living. Unto Adam also and to his wife did the Lord God make coats of skins, and clothed them. And the Lord God said, Behold, the man is become as one of us, to know good and evil: and now, lest he put forth his hand, and take also of the tree of life, and eat, and live for ever: Therefore the Lord God sent him forth from the garden of Eden, to till the ground from whence he was taken. So he drove out the man; and he placed at the east of the garden of Eden Cherubims, and a flaming sword which turned every way, to keep the way of the tree of life. (Genesis 3:1-24)

I am just totally shocked about this. I cannot believe that I didn't understand this before now. Now we just did a chapter on how I am in the Garden of Eden. Even though I went through the space that I didn't listen to the Bible, I always have the scriptures on my mind. So, I am constantly hearing what the Father is saying. Don't get ahead of me now. When they were in the Garden, they could hear what God was saying and that was not to eat of the tree in the midst of the Garden. But when they could no longer hear God because they

stopped listening, then Eve's imagination told her that she didn't need to listen to God and that she would not die if she ate from that tree.

That tree in the midst of the Garden that we are not to eat from is listed in Leviticus eleven, as showed in previous books, it is the unclean animals. Now that they ate of the tree in the midst of the Garden, they got back into the scriptures and could hear God's voice again.

Just as it was for me. When I was going through the part where I would listen to the Bible, then switch back and forth through the radio stations, and back to the Bible, my imagination started to tell me all kinds of things. Then eventually, my imagination got the best of me, and convinced me that I no longer needed to listen to the Bible at all.

And as soon as they start to hear God again, they felt guilty for what they had done. Just the same as I was feeling. Then they go through this part of blaming everyone else, instead of taking the blame for themselves. Just as I was doing, I started to blame the Father for not revealing me yet and that led to all kinds of negative behavior.

Then as we all know now, when the Father took them out of the Garden, which was the first death. And Adam and Eve did die the day they ate the fruit from the tree in the midst of the Garden. And then our Father placed a spiritual fire all around the Garden. And that was our Father's way of saying you are going to work through this fire if you want to hear my voice again. They no longer have eternal life now that they are kicked out of the Garden. God told Eve that she will greatly multiply thy sorrow and thy conception; in sorrow thou shalt bring forth children; and thy desire shall be to thy husband, and he shall rule over thee. And told Adam, in sorrow shalt thou eat of it all the days of thy life; Thorns also and thistles shall it bring forth to thee; and thou shalt eat the herb of the field; In the sweat of thy face shalt thou eat bread, till thou return unto the ground; for out of it wast thou taken: for dust thou art, and unto dust shalt thou return.

Now they must learn how to live and survive, just so they can die. Listen to what we are told about our lives and how it is all vanity.

I said in mine heart, Go to now, I will prove thee with mirth, therefore enjoy pleasure: and, behold, this also is vanity. I said of laughter, It is mad: and of mirth, What doeth it? I sought in mine heart to give myself unto wine, yet acquainting mine heart with wisdom; and to lay hold on folly, till I might see what was that good for the sons of men, which they should do under the heaven all the days of their life. I made me great works; I builded me houses; I planted me vineyards: I made me gardens and orchards, and I planted trees in them of all kind of fruits: I made me pools of water, to water therewith the wood that bringeth forth trees: I got me servants and maidens, and had servants born in my house; also I had great possessions of great and small cattle above all that were in Jerusalem before me: I gathered me also silver and gold, and the peculiar treasure of kings and of the provinces: I gat me men singers and women singers, and the delights of the sons of men, as musical instruments, and that of all sorts. So I was great, and increased more than all that were before me in Jerusalem: also my wisdom remained with me. And whatsoever mine eyes desired I kept not from them, I withheld not my heart from any joy; for my heart rejoiced in all my labour: and this was my portion of all my labour. Then I looked on all the works that my hands had wrought, and on the labour that I had laboured to do: and, behold, all was vanity and vexation of spirit, and there was no profit under the sun. And I turned myself to behold wisdom, and madness, and folly: for what can the man do that cometh after the king? even that which hath been already done. Then I saw that wisdom excelleth folly, as far as light excelleth darkness. The wise man's eyes are in his head; but the fool walketh in darkness: and I myself perceived also that one event happeneth

to them all. Then said I in my heart, As it happeneth to the fool, so it happeneth even to me; and why was I then more wise? Then I said in my heart, that this also is vanity. For there is no remembrance of the wise more than of the fool for ever; seeing that which now is in the days to come shall all be forgotten. And how dieth the wise man? as the fool. Therefore I hated life; because the work that is wrought under the sun is grievous unto me: for all is vanity and vexation of spirit. Yea, I hated all my labour which I had taken under the sun: because I should leave it unto the man that shall be after me. And who knoweth whether he shall be a wise man or a fool? yet shall he have rule over all my labour wherein I have laboured, and wherein I have shewed myself wise under the sun. This is also vanity. Therefore I went about to cause my heart to despair of all the labour which I took under the sun. For there is a man whose labour is in wisdom, and in knowledge, and in equity; yet to a man that hath not laboured therein shall he leave it for his portion. This also is vanity and a great evil. For what hath man of all his labour, and of the vexation of his heart, wherein he hath laboured under the sun? For all his days are sorrows, and his travail grief; yea, his heart taketh not rest in the night. This is also vanity. There is nothing better for a man, than that he should eat and drink, and that he should make his soul enjoy good in his labour. This also I saw, that it was from the hand of God. For who can eat, or who else can hasten hereunto, more than I? For God giveth to a man that is good in his sight wisdom, and knowledge, and joy: but to the sinner he giveth travail, to gather and to heap up, that he may give to him that is good before God. This also is vanity and vexation of spirit. (Ecclesiastes 2:1-26)

Now that they got kicked out of the garden, they must die. But then God said that His covenant is good for a thousand generations. As explained in previous books, a generation is seventy to eighty years. In other words, God said that our soul that got kicked of the garden must go through a thousand lives of being born, learning how to do everything that one does in their lives, then die. That is where we need to understand reincarnation as explained in previous books. And there is a chapter on reincarnation at the end of this book.

Then He ask me if I now knew how the serpent was able to move Jesus to all of those places. I told Him yes; it was his imagination that was telling him that he could do all of those things. Then He tells me to think about when the scriptures talk about Jesus being tempted again. But not the temptation part, the part where the devil leaves him.

And when the devil had ended all the temptation, he departed from him for a season. (Luke 4:13)

Then He tells me to think about how it use to be when I would listen to the Bible all the time. How happy I was, how eager I was to learn, how invincible I felt. Then He tells me to think about how the scriptures tell you that the devil left for a season. Then think of the relief you felt when you started listening to the Bible again. Then He tells me to think about how to get the devil to flee from you.

Submit yourselves therefore to God. Resist the devil, and he will flee from you. (James 4:7)

And the ransomed of the Lord shall return, and come to Zion with songs and everlasting joy upon their heads: they shall obtain joy and gladness, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away. (Isaiah 35:10)

Therefore the redeemed of the Lord shall return, and come with singing unto Zion; and everlasting joy

PRECEPT SEVEN

shall be upon their head: they shall obtain gladness
and joy; and sorrow and mourning shall flee away.
(Isaiah 51:11)

Oh my gosh, all I have to do to keep the devil away from me is listen to the Bible. I told Him that I will get me more Bibles on cd to keep on hand just in case these ones burn out as before. And I told Him that I am going to get another portable cd player just in case this one quits, like the one I burnt out before.

So, I asked the Father, wouldn't this be better in the chapter, Get thee behind me Satan. He immediately told me no, and then asked me how you felt when all this took place. Well, I guess I am supposed to say I feel like the victim because that is what you told me to name the chapter. Then He tells me to think about how Adam and Eve blamed their faults on others. Adam blamed the woman and me, by saying the woman you gave me, gave me the fruit, so I ate it. Eve blamed the serpent, so what did they do when they did this. Wow Father, they made themselves into the victims at the hand of someone else's wrongdoing.

So, then He asked me if that was what I was doing to Him. Yea, I was making myself into the victim of what I wanted to say was your wrongdoing, but you can't do wrong, you're perfect. So, He asked me who's fault is it that your imagination got the best of you. Well, that is my fault Father, is my reply. Nobody forced me to stop listening to the Bible. It was my own choice; I didn't have to listen to the serpent. So, in retrospect, I was allowing myself to become the victim.

Then He tells me to think about how everybody always blames others for something that has or is going wrong in their life. And what are they doing? Well, Father they are making themselves into the victim at what they think is someone else's wrongdoing. When we both know that nothing goes wrong in anyone's life unless you allow it. Then He said, but they never seek me out to learn this. I have never told them that I am not here for you, and I have always said that my hand is still stretched out.

The Syrians before, and the Philistines behind; and they shall devour Israel with open mouth. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. For the people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither do they seek the Lord of hosts. Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel head and tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail. For the leaders of this people cause them to err; and they that are led of them are destroyed. Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for every one is an hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaketh folly. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 9:12-17)

Then we all should know by now that the serpent was cursed to our belly, and that is why we eat an average of six pounds of dirt in a lifetime. We will be talking about that in the next chapter.

But before we go onto the next chapter, there is something that I need to say. I have been telling you all in the last few books that I am not writing anymore. I guess I can say that my imagination started to work on me awhile before this last year, but not nearly as bad. I know part of it was that after each book that we published, I was so amazed at what knowledge each book contained, that I couldn't see how there could be more. I think I started to think that way after the fourth book.

Boy was I wrong, I am so glad to be listening to the Bible, and being in the heavenly places again. After doing this chapter, I can almost hear the serpent saying, right after I totally quit listening to the Bible, welcome to hell. I am not coming back down; I am staying up here with the Father. That was a gruesome year or so. Yes, I must make my bed in hell still, I cannot listen while I sleep, but as soon as I awake, I will be ascending back up into heaven.

Now I can truly say I know how our Father delivered me from the lowest hell.

Bow down thine ear, O Lord, hear me: for I am poor and needy. Preserve my soul; for I am holy: O thou my God, save thy servant that trusteth in thee. Be merciful unto me, O Lord: for I cry unto thee daily. Rejoice the soul of thy servant: for unto thee, O Lord, do I lift up my soul. For thou, Lord, art good, and ready to forgive; and plenteous in mercy unto all them that call upon thee. Give ear, O Lord, unto my prayer; and attend to the voice of my supplications. In the day of my trouble I will call upon thee: for thou wilt answer me. Among the gods there is none like unto thee, O Lord; neither are there any works like unto thy works. All nations whom thou hast made shall come and worship before thee, O Lord; and shall glorify thy name. For thou art great, and doest wondrous things: thou art God alone. Teach me thy way, O Lord; I will walk in thy truth: unite my heart to fear thy name. I will praise thee, O Lord my God, with all my heart: and I will glorify thy name for evermore. For great is thy mercy toward me: and thou hast delivered my soul from the lowest hell. O God, the proud are risen against me, and the assemblies of violent men have sought after my soul; and have not set thee before them. But thou, O Lord, art a God full of compassion, and gracious, long suffering, and plenteous in mercy and truth. O turn unto me, and have mercy upon me; give thy strength unto thy servant, and save the son of thine handmaid. Shew me a token for good; that they which hate me may see it, and be ashamed: because thou, Lord, hast holpen me, and comforted me. (Psalm 86:1-17)

With all that being said, now that I am listening again, I am hearing things differently now. With all this newfound knowledge, it is like I am hearing everything from a different perspective. But because the deadline to get this manuscript submitted is soon approaching, I do not have time to put it in this book. I still have three more chapters to get done within the next five days. So, I think there will most likely be a precept eight. If He wants me to write more than that, I will. There will be no more complaining. But I will say this also, there is absolutely no way I would have comprehended all that is in this book, if I hadn't gone through the past year or so. And that is what you call hard core, hands on, one on one training.

Okay bear with me, but we are going to do another conversation that the Father and I had today. I thought this chapter was done when I closed my laptop before starting my shift today. But because I am listening to the Bible again, the knowledge is just porting in like there is no tomorrow.

A couple of weeks ago, I started to develop some chest pains on my left side. They were very mild at first, but gradually got worse. It started to hurt when I coughed, when I moved my left arm, and when I took a deep breath. I started to get a little concerned because I remember what my dad said when he was alive as my dad, before he had his lung removed. He had said that he was having pains similar to what I am experiencing. And I smoke cigarettes just as my dad did. And I am not going to explain that again.

Now before I go any further, I must state that I am not a doctor, nor am I giving medical advice to anyone. For some reason the other day, I felt compelled to call Cathy to talk about theses pains. She knows that I will not go to a doctor, but I thought maybe I should give her and my daughter a heads up, just in case I was about to have a heart attack or something. The pains were getting bad enough that I had myself convinced that I had the same thing as my dad. And I was telling the Father to just let me stay alive long enough to finish this book, because I as you all can tell, this one is revealing the deepest secrets that we have ever revealed.

Then last night as I am driving and listening to the Bible, I hear the Father tell my conscience to drink some water. I am like what? Then I started to think about it. Ever since I got back from Alaska, I haven't been exercising due to the weather. When the weather is decent, I like to go for walks. My personal best is eight miles. I have a goal of getting to ten miles at three and a half mph average.

Then the Father started pouring all this knowledge in, I just started using my free time to work on the book. Then I started thinking of how I drink coffee all day long, which has water. But I am drinking power aide with my meals. And maybe a little lactose free milk once in a while. Well, none of these are straight water. I tell the Father that I am not going to resist you anymore, as I grab a bottle of water sitting on the floor right next to my seat.

Ye stiffnecked and uncircumcised in heart and ears, ye
do always resist the Holy Ghost: as your fathers did,
so do ye. (Acts 7:51)

Within about a half hour, I started to feel a little relief, not much but a little. So, I chugged another bottle. Then when it came time to shut down for the night and work on the book, I could feel even a little more relief. Then when I awoke, the pain was only about half as bad as it was getting to be.

So, as I was driving today, I made sure I was drinking a lot of water. I even called Cathy to let her know that I think this is just from dehydration or something, and then I told her of how the Father told me to drink water. I even told her that it seems like everytime I call someone now, it is to teach me something. Then I told her that there is probably something coming in from this phone call later today. And a couple hours after that call, the Father told me that I am going to be putting this experience in the book, that is why I called her. I thought it was just to show how easy it is to allow your imagination to take over, but as you all read through this, you are going to learn that there is more than that.

But before we go on, let me explain this. The Father had told me that I never really felt like I was thirsty over the past couple of weeks. No, not really is my reply. I never even thought about it because I was drinking a lot of coffee, which has water in it. Power Aide is to help with dehydration, so I never gave it a second thought. Then He ask me, how easy was it for your imagination to convince you that you didn't need to listen to the Bible. Well Father, I felt like I battled pretty hard until I sent in the manuscript for the sixth book. But after that, I was done listening. He said, really, you feel you battled it pretty hard. Then what was all that jumping back in fourth between the Bible and the radio about. After thinking about it for a minute or two, I realized it was my imagination that was making me mad, thinking you were out to get me or something. So, now that I think about it, it was really easy for my imagination to take over.

Then He says, just like it was for you to not realize that you were not getting enough water. It is that simple, you can drink liquids all day long just as you do, but you still got dehydrated in so much that it is causing you to have chest pains. Then He tells me that He wants everyone to know just how easy it is for the imagination to take over. So, then I ask, then it was you that kept me from drinking water so we could put this in the book, and He says yes. I started to laugh and asked, is there anything that happens to me that you don't have control over. And He said nope, and I want you to show how nothing happens to anyone unless it comes from me.

John answered and said, A man can receive nothing,
except it be given him from heaven. (John 3:27)

Then just after I had been driven for just over seven hours, I started to think that I was going to stop at a truck stop for my thirty-minute break. Just before I got to the exit, my conscience told me not to stop there and go to the next rest area. I thought okay, I can do that. I got a coffee pot, and plenty to eat in the truck, I don't need the truck stop.

Then right before I get to the rest area, He tells me that I can use this break to exercise. I started to think it is dark out and I am not

familiar with this area, but I guess I could just walk around in the parking lot. Then He ask me, what about that portable stair climber that I had you get last summer. I said, oh yea, I can do that.

So, I pull into the rest area, start a pot of coffee, and get the stair climber set up. It sits on top of a cabinet that I keep in my passengers seat. Then when I want to use it, I move the case of water from the floor and put the stair climber there. As I was lifting it off the cabinet, I got some sharp pains in my left side, just under my armpit. I asked the Father if I should do this. Then He told me to just do as I you are told to do. Okay, you are the boss, is my reply.

I get on it thinking I am going to be on it for thirty minutes and then I will fix me a quick bite to eat before I finish off my eleven hours of driving for the day.

As soon as I get on it, I do three sets of fifteen reps of four different exercises with the resistance bands that are attached to the climber. I left the Bible playing in the cd player because it just seems I can't get enough. While I was doing these reps, the last track on the player finished. I stopped for a second to change the cd to the next one, and the Father said no, we are going to talk. I said, uh-oh, did I do something wrong?

He tells me that He wants me on this climber for forty-five minutes every day. I am like, questioning every day. He tells me I want you on this climber for forty-five minutes a minimum of five days a week. And I want you to do three sets of fifteen reps of what you do with the resistance bands, every time you are on it. I tell Him, you're the boss, you are my doctor, and I will do as you say.

Now we are going to talk about how He is my doctor. We have already pointed out how the scriptures talk against medicines, but we didn't show how the scriptures teach that we should be seeking our Father for our health problems.

And Asa in the thirty and ninth year of his reign was diseased in his feet, until his disease was exceeding great: yet in his disease he sought not to the Lord, but to the physicians. And Asa slept with his fathers,

and died in the one and fortieth year of his reign. And they buried him in his own sepulchres, which he had made for himself in the city of David, and laid him in the bed which was filled with sweet odours and divers kinds of spices prepared by the apothecaries' art: and they made a very great burning for him. (2 Chronicles 16:12-14)

Now I am going to reflect on when my brother was in Alaska with me. He had said that he had been on a diet that his doctor recommended. He was also taking medicine that the doctor had given him to help him lose weight. The he told me that he lost ten pounds in the last year. Granted, he is disabled, so he cannot exercise like I can. So, I told him that is why I listen to the Father. Going back to the incident that happened in May of 2022, I never went to a physician in the flesh, I listened to what the Father told me to do, and I lost sixty pounds in four months. And I will say with all certainty now, if I would have sought medical care from a physician, I would probably still be there trying to lose weight. And now because I am doing what the Father is telling me to do, I would put my money on this pain in my chest area will be completely going within three weeks max.

Back to the Father and I talking. Just about the same time I told the Father that I would do this, I asked about the book because we had to get it done by Monday. He tells me, don't worry about the book, I will make time for you to get it done, after all, I am writing it, not you.

Then He tells me that He wants this conversation in this chapter. I started laughing and told Him that if I keep telling them about our conversations, they are going to think I am nuts. He said, no David, think about it, what is one of the thing that you did not mention, that you would not allow your imagination to convince you of. I couldn't think about what He was referring to because I thought I had covered all of it.

Then he tells me that I did not seek knowledge of Him from any other source than the King James Bible. I said, well of course Father, you had me say the King James Version of the Bible is one long letter

from our Father on how we are to live our lives. So why would I search you out anywhere else. Then He tells me, you held your ground, along with some other things you clung to, you would not seek me out anywhere else, even though you were going through all that you were going through.

Then He tells me to think about the chapter we had done, By Wisdom The World Knew not God. I tell Him yea, I know I am the foolishness that your using, what about it Father. Then He says, all those people with all that wisdom, their minds are full of garbage. Then He goes on to say that when I try to talk to them, they rebuke me. They don't want anything to do with my voice because they think they can find me somewhere other than where I told them I am.

Then He goes on to tell me, when I talk with you David, you welcome it with open arms. Then He tells me that my mind is not full of that garbage. You love it when we converse. You're always smiling, you're laughing, and you have fun with it. Then I say while I am laughing, why wouldn't I Father, you're the best companion ever, and I am never alone.

Behold, the hour cometh, yea, is now come, that ye shall be scattered, every man to his own, and shall leave me alone: and yet I am not alone, because the Father is with me. (John 16:32)

Then He goes on to say, tell them that any and all can have the same relationship you and I have. All they have to do is truly want it.

For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened. Or what man is there of you, whom if his son ask bread, will he give him a stone? Or if he ask a fish, will he give him a serpent? If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children, how much more shall your Father which is in heaven give good things to them that ask him? (Matthew 7:8-11)

That is the end of the conversation with our Father, but I want to bring something up that truly goes along with this whole lesson. Now I told you all earlier that I listen to rock and roll music. No, I haven't listened to one song nor video since I started listening to the Bible again. But there is one song that I think I mentioned that I would hear a lot. And I would always wonder if he knew what he was saying was so close to the truth. That song being Judas, by Fozzy. I am not going to recite the lyrics but one line of the chorus. Judas in my mind.

Oh wow, I am adding this after getting some sleep. As I am listening to the verse of the day wrap, I hear something that has everything to with these conversations that the Father and I have. But before I heard this, I realized that the pain in my chest is almost completely gone, I would say maybe five percent of the pain is still there. So, I guess that I should have said that I would put money on the pain being gone in three days, not three weeks. Then I heard this.

When thou hast eaten and art full, then thou shalt bless the Lord thy God for the good land which he hath given thee. Beware that thou forget not the Lord thy God, in not keeping his commandments, and his judgments, and his statutes, which I command thee this day: Lest when thou hast eaten and art full, and hast built goodly houses, and dwelt therein; And when thy herds and thy flocks multiply, and thy silver and thy gold is multiplied, and all that thou hast is multiplied; Then thine heart be lifted up, and thou forget the Lord thy God, which brought thee forth out of the land of Egypt, from the house of bondage; Who led thee through that great and terrible wilderness, wherein were fiery serpents, and scorpions, and drought, where there was no water; who brought thee forth water out of the rock of flint; Who fed thee in the wilderness with manna, which thy fathers knew not, that he might humble thee, and that he might prove thee, to do thee good at thy latter

end; And thou say in thine heart, My power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth. But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day. And it shall be, if thou do at all forget the Lord thy God, and walk after other gods, and serve them, and worship them, I testify against you this day that ye shall surely perish. As the nations which the Lord destroyeth before your face, so shall ye perish; because ye would not be obedient unto the voice of the Lord your God. (Deuteronomy 8:10-20)

Yes, I posted extra verses because I just felt that I wanted to draw attention to the first verse of what we posted. But then He goes on to talk about how if we forget that it is Him that does all this for us, He will cause us to perish because we would not be obedient to the voice of the Lord your God. His voice is you conscience. This is flooring me again because I have been showing that we hear Him through our conscience, but I have never thought about how that is the way we converse all the time. Now that makes even more since as to why there are thirty verses that mention the conscience, with a couple of those verses mentioning the conscience twice. And there are fifteen verses that tell us to be sober, soberminded, or to think soberly. Wow, it truly is half the battle. The voice of God in our conscience, and the voice of the serpent is our imagination.

Okay I thought we were done with this chapter, but the Father is telling me that He wants another conversation we had as we were driving last night after starting my shift. I just got started, and was getting ready to put the Bible on. Then He tells me not to turn it on, we are going to talk for a while. I said, Okay we can do that.

I am going to say this up front, I thought parts of this conversation needed to be connected to a previous conversation but after placing some of it there, it felt that I was robbing you all of part of the actual

conversation. On that note, I will say that I am not going to even try to cover everything because this lasted over three hours.

I want to point something out before we get going on this conversation. These last few days, the Father has been telling me to put these conversations in this book. This has gotten me to think about how they had conversations with God in the Old Testament. I can now understand how they could hear the voice of God. I have always know that the Father and I talk all the time, but not with the intensity as it is going on now.

He started out by reminding me of the conversation we were having about how I didn't mention that I didn't seek Him out anywhere else. That is why I thought part of this needed to go there. Then He said something that took me by surprise. He said that you were patient through your tribulations.

Rejoicing in hope; patient in tribulation; continuing instant in prayer; (Romans 12:12)

For ye have need of patience, that, after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promise. (Hebrews 10:36)

For this is thankworthy, if a man for conscience toward God endure grief, suffering wrongfully. For what glory is it, if, when ye be buffeted for your faults, ye shall take it patiently? but if, when ye do well, and suffer for it, ye take it patiently, this is acceptable with God. (1 Peter 2:19-20)

Every man's work shall be made manifest: for the day shall declare it, because it shall be revealed by fire; and the fire shall try every man's work of what sort it is. If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. If any man's work shall be

burned, he shall suffer loss: but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire. (1 Corinthians 3:13-15)

Then I asked the Father, how was me, cussing at you, profaning your name, screaming at you, and thinking that you didn't love me, thinking you were done with me being patient? Then He says, David, you said all kinds of things. Yes you profaned my name, you screamed at me, but you would not do as they do. You would not eat unclean things, you would not celebrate, nor have anything to do with birthdays and holidays. You would not seek me anywhere else. And then He put it on my conscience to think of how I made it through the fire, and that I didn't go and serves any other gods, I clung to Him as I was going through this.

For I have kept the ways of the Lord, and have not wickedly departed from my God. For all his judgments were before me, and I did not put away his statutes from me. I was also upright before him, and I kept myself from mine iniquity. Therefore hath the Lord recompensed me according to my righteousness, according to the cleanness of my hands in his eyesight. (Psalm 18:21-24)

Then He goes on to say you did this because you truly believe that this is real. There is no doubt in your mind. You believe with all of your heart, soul, mind, and strength that all the answers are in the scriptures, even though you could not figure out why you were having such a rough time. You didn't give up.

Then the Father asked me if I remembered what I used to tell Cathy all the time. I said yea Father, I would tell her that I was a hypocritical hypocrite. Then He said, thats right and that is exactly what you are. You said you would go find a woman, you said you would cut your hair, you said you would shave off your beard. But you never acted on anything that you said you would do. And you never had any intentions of doing such. You always told Cathy that you

knew that you would say that you would do certain things, but you always told her that you would not go through with any of it. Then He said you truly worship me from your heart, and now you truly know what it means when the scriptures talk about how many worship me from the mouth, but their heart is far from me.

Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men: (Isaiah 29:13)

Ye hypocrites, well did Esaias prophesy of you, saying, This people draweth nigh unto me with their mouth, and honoureth me with their lips; but their heart is far from me. But in vain they do worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men. (Matthew 15:7-9)

Then He reminds me of how I would ask forgiveness every night. Then He tells me that if I worshipped Him with my mouth only, I would eat of the unclean things, I would celebrate the days that He never commanded. I would try to seek Him out somewhere other than the King James Version of the Bible. Then He tells me to think of the scriptures that tell us to be angry and sin not.

Be ye angry, and sin not: let not the sun go down upon your wrath: Neither give place to the devil. (Ephesians 4:26-27)

My response was that I was angry, and I sinned. Then He said yea you were angry, but you never turned your back on me. Those were just words that came from your mouth and not your heart. Then He said to me, you never lost your faith in me even though you were struggling. And my response is how could I Father, even though I was saying all

those nasty things, you continued to show me that I still had your protection. I said, you and I both know that there were times I should have gotten into an accident or something of the sort, but you always kept me safe. And you kept evil away from me at all times.

He delivereth me from mine enemies: yea, thou liftest me up above those that rise up against me: thou hast delivered me from the violent man. (Psalm 18:48)

It was about four hours into the drive, when He tells me to go ahead and turn on the radio, not the Bible. So, I put it on a country music station. The He asked me, why country and not the rock you like so much. I reply, I do not want to hear all the swearing that is in rock music. You know as well as I do Father, when I listened to country music for about five years, way back when, I know that there is nowhere near the amount of swearing in country music. And I want to clean up my mouth. And you know how I hate listening to Christian music because they glorify the son of God more than you. In fact, they hardly glorify you at all, and you deserve all the glory.

And rend your heart, and not your garments, and turn unto the Lord your God: for he is gracious and merciful, slow to anger, and of great kindness, and repenteth him of the evil. (Joel 2:13)

Because thine heart was tender, and thou hast humbled thyself before the Lord, when thou heardest what I spake against this place, and against the inhabitants thereof, that they should become a desolation and a curse, and hast rent thy clothes, and wept before me; I also have heard thee, saith the Lord. (2 Kings 22:19)

Then He proceeds to put on my conscience of how when I even think of saying a swear word, I say I am sorry Father. Then He tell me that He knows my every thought.

And thou, Solomon my son, know thou the God of thy father, and serve him with a perfect heart and with a willing mind: for the Lord searcheth all hearts, and understandeth all the imaginations of the thoughts: if thou seek him, he will be found of thee; but if thou forsake him, he will cast thee off for ever. (1 Chronicles 28:9)

Thou knowest my downsitting and mine uprising, thou understandest my thought afar off. (Psalm 139:2)

Then He goes on to ask me if I remember how I felt when Livia was upset when she thought I was trying to back out of what I had asked her to do for me. I told Him, yea Father, it broke my heart. Then He ask why it broke your heart. I told Him because I didn't make myself clear and she thought that I made her go through all that she did for nothing. Then He said no David, it broke your heart because you felt her pain, and you have never even met her.

Now this is where I need to make a confession. When the Father told me this, tears started rolling down my face as I was driving. I have been doing this for so long that I never thought about it like that. I just knew that I didn't like to hurt people's feelings. And to be honest, I am tearing up a little now as I am writing this. The way this makes me feel with the Father saying that just really hit me hard. I mean it is coming from Him, the Perfect One. Just a couple of minutes after this, He asked me, don't you know that I know you better than you know yourself David.

And I say unto you my friends, Be not afraid of them that kill the body, and after that have no more that they can do. But I will forewarn you whom ye shall fear: Fear him, which after he hath killed hath power to cast into hell; yea, I say unto you, Fear him. Are not five sparrows sold for two farthings, and not one of them is forgotten before God? But even the very hairs

PRECEPT SEVEN

of your head are all numbered. Fear not therefore: ye are of more value than many sparrows. (Luke 12:4-7)

I the Lord search the heart, I try the reins, even to give every man according to his ways, and according to the fruit of his doings.(Jeremiah 17:10)

Then He said, David you feel their pain because you truly do love your neighbor as yourself. You love all of my children just as I do. And you let me teach you how to love that way because you love me that way as well.

And thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind, and with all thy strength: this is the first commandment. And the second is like, namely this, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. There is none other commandment greater than these. (Mark 12:30-31)

Then I asked the Father, why are you wanting me to put this conversation in this book. Then He tells me, because I want them to see your works.

Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils also believe, and tremble. But wilt thou know, O vain man, that faith without works is dead? Was not Abraham our father justified by works, when he had offered Isaac his son upon the altar? Seest thou how faith wrought with his works, and by works was faith made perfect? And the scripture was fulfilled which saith, Abraham believed God, and it was imputed unto him for righteousness: and he was called the Friend of God. Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only. Likewise also was not Rahab the harlot justified by

works, when she had received the messengers, and had sent them out another way? For as the body without the spirit is dead, so faith without works is dead also. (James 2:19-26)

Say ye of him, whom the Father hath sanctified, and sent into the world, Thou blasphemest; because I said, I am the Son of God? If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him. (John 10:36-38)

Then I said to the Father, I thought I wasn't supposed to be bragging about my works. Then He tells me that you're not bragging, I AM showing the world how you got to where you are because you are an example for the people.

For even hereunto were ye called: because Christ also suffered for us, leaving us an example, that ye should follow his steps: (1 Peter 2:21)

Exorcisms

After the last chapter, I am looking forward to doing this one. When the Father first told me to call a chapter by this name, I knew it had something to do with a movie that we talked about in, I think it was the third and fourth books. But the third book is in the fourth, so in the fourth book, Jesus is here.

The movie I am referring to is the Exorcism Of Emily Rose. This movie is based off of a true story and if I remember correctly, people can still go and visit her grave. But in this movie, she said some things that caught my attention. When this supposed exorcism was taking place, she said one, two, three, four, five, six, I am the one the dwells within. Then she went on to say we are many or something like that.

I had written the first paragraph a couple of days ago because I was thinking that this would be a good way to start the chapter. Then yesterday, sometime while I was driving, the Father told me He wants this to start off another way. So, I ask Him, do I need to remove what I have already done. And His reply is no, we will get to that later, but we need to start off with how the kings of the old testament have dominion over the people of the land, today and not of the past.

Now I need to confess, this is one of the things that I started hearing as I am listening to the Bible, but thought it would be in the next book because I didn't think we would have time to put in this one. I even started to show earlier in this book, of how they have dominion over us, but I wasn't going to talk that much about it in this book. But as you can tell, here we go.

So, to start this we are going to show some where the Bible talks about this dominion.

And it yieldeth much increase unto the kings whom thou hast set over us because of our sins: also they have dominion over our bodies, and over our cattle, at their pleasure, and we are in great distress. (Nehemiah 9:37)

Thy kingdom is an everlasting kingdom, and thy dominion endureth throughout all generations. (Psalm 145:13)

Bless the Lord, all his works in all places of his dominion: bless the Lord, O my soul. (Psalm 103:22)

Their inward thought is, that their houses shall continue for ever, and their dwelling places to all generations; they call their lands after their own names. Nevertheless man being in honour abideth not: he is like the beasts that perish. This their way is their folly: yet their posterity approve their sayings. Selah. Like sheep they are laid in the grave; death shall feed on them; and the upright shall have dominion over them in the morning; and their beauty shall consume in the grave from their dwelling. (Psalm 49:11)

Who can understand his errors? cleanse thou me from secret faults. Keep back thy servant also from presumptuous sins; let them not have dominion over me: then shall I be upright, and I shall be innocent from the great transgression. Let the words of my mouth, and the meditation of my heart, be acceptable in thy sight, O Lord, my strength, and my redeemer. (Psalm 19:12)

Okay now that we can see that those above us have dominion over us. We need to remember what we showed in the fourth book,

PRECEPT SEVEN

Jesus is here, they have dominion over us just as we have dominion over the animals.

And God said, Let us make man in our image, after our likeness: and let them have dominion over the fish of the sea, and over the fowl of the air, and over the cattle, and over all the earth, and over every creeping thing that creepeth upon the earth. (Genesis 1:26)

Without reciting it all, remember how we are to pray; thy will be done in earth as it is in heaven. So, what we are going to do now is listen to how certain leaders were filled with knowledge of how to do different things.

And the Lord spake unto Moses, saying, See, I have called by name Bezaleel the son of Uri, the son of Hur, of the tribe of Judah: And I have filled him with the spirit of God, in wisdom, and in understanding, and in knowledge, and in all manner of workmanship, To devise cunning works, to work in gold, and in silver, and in brass, And in cutting of stones, to set them, and in carving of timber, to work in all manner of workmanship. (Exodus 31:1-5)

And Moses said unto the children of Israel, See, the Lord hath called by name Bezaleel the son of Uri, the son of Hur, of the tribe of Judah; And he hath filled him with the spirit of God, in wisdom, in understanding, and in knowledge, and in all manner of workmanship; And to devise curious works, to work in gold, and in silver, and in brass, And in the cutting of stones, to set them, and in carving of wood, to make any manner of cunning work. And he hath put in his heart that he may teach, both he, and Aholiab, the son of Ahisamach, of the tribe of Dan. Them hath

he filled with wisdom of heart, to work all manner of work, of the engraver, and of the cunning workman, and of the embroiderer, in blue, and in purple, in scarlet, and in fine linen, and of the weaver, even of them that do any work, and of those that devise cunning work. (Exodus 35:30-35)

Before we go any further I want to clarify that our Father is the King of kings. Lord of lords.

The king answered unto Daniel, and said, Of a truth it is, that your God is a God of gods, and a Lord of kings, and a revealer of secrets, seeing thou couldest reveal this secret. Daniel 2:47)

For the Lord your God is God of gods, and Lord of lords, a great God, a mighty, and a terrible, which regardeth not persons, nor taketh reward: (Deuteronomy 10:17)

Yea, all kings shall fall down before him: all nations shall serve him.(Psalm 72:11)

What we are getting ready to show is something that I talked about in the second book, Behold, a greater than Jonas is here. In the chapter The Son of God, but I never connected it to how them having dominion over us as to how this is done. I have shown in several books, that everybody has their own laws, rules, judgments, ordinances, testimonies, and commandments. Nobody has the same. We just heard a few minutes ago of how certain people were given wisdom to know how to work with wood, metal, stone, gold, silver brass, and all manner of work.

Now I also want to point out that one person can be counted as many, or many people can be counted as one man in the Bible.

PRECEPT SEVEN

And all the people gathered themselves together as one man into the street that was before the water gate; and they spake unto Ezra the scribe to bring the book of the law of Moses, which the Lord had commanded to Israel. (Nehemiah 8:1)

Then all the children of Israel went out, and the congregation was gathered together as one man, from Dan even to Beersheba, with the land of Gilead, unto the Lord in Mizpeh. (Judges 20:1)

To give an example of this, the largest employer in this country is Walmart, so all the employes could represent one. If all the Walmart employes go on strike, all the Walmart stores would be forced to close. So, one force did it. Or if some giant auto manufacture employes went on strike, the plant would shut down. All the people that go on strike represent one manufacturing plant. So, one force shut it down.

These kings and their people that are placed under them, tell each person's conscience to do whatever someone does for a living. Yes, these kings are those that cause us to get up and go to work. Now I am going to use my life as an example, but watch how many other kings had dominion over many others, just so I could do my job. These kings told my conscience to become a truck driver. So, now that I am a truck driver, I drive around six hundred miles a day, on most days.

There is kings that told the consciences of some people to learn how to build the truck I drive, and all the components that go into this truck. They had to learn how to make all the components that went in this truck so that this truck could move. Same thing with the trailer. Then some had to be taught how to build the warehouses that I pick up and deliver my load. Then the kings had to give the wisdom to some to know how to operate the and run these warehouses. Then some had to be taught how to build houses, transportation, and make clothing, and other conveniences for the employees that work at the warehouses. And I am not even going to try to explain how many

people had to be given wisdom to provide everyday conveniences for all the people we have already mentioned.

Then some of these kings had to tell the consciences of some to learn how to make the roads that I drive on. Then all the conveniences for those people. Now think about all the interstates, highways, and roads throughout this country. Now think about how the same is done in other countries. Then some had to be taught how to make the signs so that I see that help keep myself and others safe on the roads.

Then some had to be given the wisdom to know how to build all the truck stops, and all the same for all of their employees. I think you all are getting the picture by now; these kings are the ones that have dominion over us so that we have all the perks of life that we have today. When this all started, there was nothing but fields. Just think of how convenient life is today. Everything you own, thousands upon thousands of people had to be given the wisdom of how to make or build it, ship it, sell it, get it to you. Same thing with everything you eat, many had to be taught to grow it, farm it, harvest it, and get it to the store so that you could get your next meal.

Now we are going to reflect on how many thing that Jesus is King of Kings.

And he hath on his vesture and on his thigh a name written, King Of Kings, And Lord Of Lords.
(Revelation 19:16)

These shall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb shall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings: and they that are with him are called, and chosen, and faithful. (Revelation 17:14)

Many believe this is saying that Jesus is the King of all kings. But as shown in previous books and this one, the book of Revelation is about the Father and not Jesus. What makes Jesus and the Father One is that piece of the Father that our Father breathed into him or everybody so that man became a living soul. Everybody is part of the

One Son of God. that is why we are told that nobody can Jesus Lord but by the Holy Ghost.

Wherefore I give you to understand, that no man speaking by the Spirit of God calleth Jesus accursed: and that no man can say that Jesus is the Lord, but by the Holy Ghost. (1 Corinthians 12:3)

In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. The same was in the beginning with God. All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made. In him was life; and the life was the light of men. And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not. (John 1:1-5)

Which he wrought in Christ, when he raised him from the dead, and set him at his own right hand in the heavenly places, Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but also in that which is to come: And hath put all things under his feet, and gave him to be the head over all things to the church, Which is his body, the fulness of him that filleth all in all.(Ephesians 1:20-23)

Giving thanks unto the Father, which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the saints in light: Who hath delivered us from the power of darkness, and hath translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son: In whom we have redemption through his blood, even the forgiveness of sins: Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature: For by him were all things created, that are in heaven, and that are in earth, visible and

invisible, whether they be thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers: all things were created by him, and for him: And he is before all things, and by him all things consist. And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firstborn from the dead; that in all things he might have the preeminence. (Colossians 1:12-18)

This is how these kings from above tell us what to do for a living. This is how even the kings who have dominion over us were made by our Father so that we would all do what we do so that we all could live on this planet. It is like this, the Father is the head of all Lords, kings, their servants, and down the line. It is like an assembly line if you will. Let us listen to where we can hear about this in Psalm.

I was glad when they said unto me, Let us go into the house of the Lord. Our feet shall stand within thy gates, O Jerusalem. Jerusalem is builded as a city that is compact together: Whither the tribes go up, the tribes of the Lord, unto the testimony of Israel, to give thanks unto the name of the Lord. For there are set thrones of judgment, the thrones of the house of David. Pray for the peace of Jerusalem: they shall prosper that love thee. Peace be within thy walls, and prosperity within thy palaces. For my brethren and companions' sakes, I will now say, Peace be within thee. Because of the house of the Lord our God I will seek thy good. (Psalm 122:1-9)

Now I spent a couple hours debating with our Father while I was driving during my shift. He brought something to my conscience that He has had me put in several of the books. He starts telling to start picturing all these kings and such. So, I do as He tells me, and then He tells me to think about a chapter that I put in the first book called The 1000 Year Reign With Christ. Then He tells me to think about

the different levels and such. Then He tells me Think about where Jerusalem is. And then it hit me.

But Jerusalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all. (Galatians 4:27)

This is where all the lords, kings, and their servants are. But there is more to it than that. This is where all the lords, kings, and their servants are. But there is more to it than that. Incorrectly shown in previous books, I thought this was Jesus before, but now I am thinking this is king Nebuchadnezzar of Daniel. When our Father takes vengeance on Jerusalem above, these that have dominion over us will be done away with. And then I will be the prince in the new Jerusalem spoken of in Revelation 22. Now what I was debating with the Father about was whether or not I was just going to tell you what chapters we can see Jerusalem in, or if I was going to show you all Jerusalem. I told Him that we didn't have time, and it will make this chapter long. But He kept insisting that you all need to see this so that you can understand what comes to follow. Needless to say, He won the debate. So, now we are going to post six chapters in which we can see this.

In the five and twentieth year of our captivity, in the beginning of the year, in the tenth day of the month, in the fourteenth year after that the city was smitten, in the selfsame day the hand of the Lord was upon me, and brought me thither. In the visions of God brought he me into the land of Israel, and set me upon a very high mountain, by which was as the frame of a city on the south. And he brought me thither, and, behold, there was a man, whose appearance was like the appearance of brass, with a line of flax in his hand, and a measuring reed; and he stood in the gate. And the man said unto me, Son of man, behold with thine eyes, and hear with thine ears, and set thine heart

upon all that I shall shew thee; for to the intent that I might shew them unto thee art thou brought hither: declare all that thou seest to the house of Israel. And behold a wall on the outside of the house round about, and in the man's hand a measuring reed of six cubits long by the cubit and an hand breadth: so he measured the breadth of the building, one reed; and the height, one reed. Then came he unto the gate which looketh toward the east, and went up the stairs thereof, and measured the threshold of the gate, which was one reed broad; and the other threshold of the gate, which was one reed broad. And every little chamber was one reed long, and one reed broad; and between the little chambers were five cubits; and the threshold of the gate by the porch of the gate within was one reed. He measured also the porch of the gate within, one reed. Then measured he the porch of the gate, eight cubits; and the posts thereof, two cubits; and the porch of the gate was inward. And the little chambers of the gate eastward were three on this side, and three on that side; they three were of one measure: and the posts had one measure on this side and on that side. And he measured the breadth of the entry of the gate, ten cubits; and the length of the gate, thirteen cubits. The space also before the little chambers was one cubit on this side, and the space was one cubit on that side: and the little chambers were six cubits on this side, and six cubits on that side. He measured then the gate from the roof of one little chamber to the roof of another: the breadth was five and twenty cubits, door against door. He made also posts of threescore cubits, even unto the post of the court round about the gate. And from the face of the gate of the entrance unto the face of the porch of the inner gate were fifty cubits. And there were narrow windows to the little chambers,

and to their posts within the gate round about, and likewise to the arches: and windows were round about inward: and upon each post were palm trees. Then brought he me into the outward court, and, lo, there were chambers, and a pavement made for the court round about: thirty chambers were upon the pavement. And the pavement by the side of the gates over against the length of the gates was the lower pavement. Then he measured the breadth from the forefront of the lower gate unto the forefront of the inner court without, an hundred cubits eastward and northward. And the gate of the outward court that looked toward the north, he measured the length thereof, and the breadth thereof. And the little chambers thereof were three on this side and three on that side; and the posts thereof and the arches thereof were after the measure of the first gate: the length thereof was fifty cubits, and the breadth five and twenty cubits. And their windows, and their arches, and their palm trees, were after the measure of the gate that looketh toward the east; and they went up unto it by seven steps; and the arches thereof were before them. And the gate of the inner court was over against the gate toward the north, and toward the east; and he measured from gate to gate an hundred cubits. After that he brought me toward the south, and behold a gate toward the south: and he measured the posts thereof and the arches thereof according to these measures. And there were windows in it and in the arches thereof round about, like those windows: the length was fifty cubits, and the breadth five and twenty cubits. And there were seven steps to go up to it, and the arches thereof were before them: and it had palm trees, one on this side, and another on that side, upon the posts thereof. And there was a gate in the inner court toward the

south: and he measured from gate to gate toward the south an hundred cubits. And he brought me to the inner court by the south gate: and he measured the south gate according to these measures; And the little chambers thereof, and the posts thereof, and the arches thereof, according to these measures: and there were windows in it and in the arches thereof round about: it was fifty cubits long, and five and twenty cubits broad. And the arches round about were five and twenty cubits long, and five cubits broad. And the arches thereof were toward the utter court; and palm trees were upon the posts thereof: and the going up to it had eight steps. And he brought me into the inner court toward the east: and he measured the gate according to these measures. And the little chambers thereof, and the posts thereof, and the arches thereof, were according to these measures: and there were windows therein and in the arches thereof round about: it was fifty cubits long, and five and twenty cubits broad. And the arches thereof were toward the outward court; and palm trees were upon the posts thereof, on this side, and on that side: and the going up to it had eight steps. And he brought me to the north gate, and measured it according to these measures; The little chambers thereof, the posts thereof, and the arches thereof, and the windows to it round about: the length was fifty cubits, and the breadth five and twenty cubits. And the posts thereof were toward the utter court; and palm trees were upon the posts thereof, on this side, and on that side: and the going up to it had eight steps. And the chambers and the entries thereof were by the posts of the gates, where they washed the burnt offering. And in the porch of the gate were two tables on this side, and two tables on that side, to slay thereon the burnt offering

and the sin offering and the trespass offering. And at the side without, as one goeth up to the entry of the north gate, were two tables; and on the other side, which was at the porch of the gate, were two tables. Four tables were on this side, and four tables on that side, by the side of the gate; eight tables, whereupon they slew their sacrifices. And the four tables were of hewn stone for the burnt offering, of a cubit and an half long, and a cubit and an half broad, and one cubit high: whereupon also they laid the instruments wherewith they slew the burnt offering and the sacrifice. And within were hooks, an hand broad, fastened round about: and upon the tables was the flesh of the offering. And without the inner gate were the chambers of the singers in the inner court, which was at the side of the north gate; and their prospect was toward the south: one at the side of the east gate having the prospect toward the north. And he said unto me, This chamber, whose prospect is toward the south, is for the priests, the keepers of the charge of the house. And the chamber whose prospect is toward the north is for the priests, the keepers of the charge of the altar: these are the sons of Zadok among the sons of Levi, which come near to the Lord to minister unto him. So he measured the court, an hundred cubits long, and an hundred cubits broad, foursquare; and the altar that was before the house. And he brought me to the porch of the house, and measured each post of the porch, five cubits on this side, and five cubits on that side: and the breadth of the gate was three cubits on this side, and three cubits on that side. The length of the porch was twenty cubits, and the breadth eleven cubits, and he brought me by the steps whereby they went up to it: and there were pillars by

the posts, one on this side, and another on that side.
(Ezekiel 40:1-49)

Afterward he brought me to the temple, and measured the posts, six cubits broad on the one side, and six cubits broad on the other side, which was the breadth of the tabernacle. And the breadth of the door was ten cubits; and the sides of the door were five cubits on the one side, and five cubits on the other side: and he measured the length thereof, forty cubits: and the breadth, twenty cubits. Then went he inward, and measured the post of the door, two cubits; and the door, six cubits; and the breadth of the door, seven cubits. So he measured the length thereof, twenty cubits; and the breadth, twenty cubits, before the temple: and he said unto me, This is the most holy place. After he measured the wall of the house, six cubits; and the breadth of every side chamber, four cubits, round about the house on every side. And the side chambers were three, one over another, and thirty in order; and they entered into the wall which was of the house for the side chambers round about, that they might have hold, but they had not hold in the wall of the house. And there was an enlarging, and a winding about still upward to the side chambers: for the winding about of the house went still upward round about the house: therefore the breadth of the house was still upward, and so increased from the lowest chamber to the highest by the midst. I saw also the height of the house round about: the foundations of the side chambers were a full reed of six great cubits. The thickness of the wall, which was for the side chamber without, was five cubits: and that which was left was the place of the side chambers that were within. And between the chambers was the wideness

of twenty cubits round about the house on every side. And the doors of the side chambers were toward the place that was left, one door toward the north, and another door toward the south: and the breadth of the place that was left was five cubits round about. Now the building that was before the separate place at the end toward the west was seventy cubits broad; and the wall of the building was five cubits thick round about, and the length thereof ninety cubits. So he measured the house, an hundred cubits long; and the separate place, and the building, with the walls thereof, an hundred cubits long; Also the breadth of the face of the house, and of the separate place toward the east, an hundred cubits. And he measured the length of the building over against the separate place which was behind it, and the galleries thereof on the one side and on the other side, an hundred cubits, with the inner temple, and the porches of the court; The door posts, and the narrow windows, and the galleries round about on their three stories, over against the door, cieled with wood round about, and from the ground up to the windows, and the windows were covered; To that above the door, even unto the inner house, and without, and by all the wall round about within and without, by measure. And it was made with cherubims and palm trees, so that a palm tree was between a cherub and a cherub; and every cherub had two faces; So that the face of a man was toward the palm tree on the one side, and the face of a young lion toward the palm tree on the other side: it was made through all the house round about. From the ground unto above the door were cherubims and palm trees made, and on the wall of the temple. The posts of the temple were squared, and the face of the sanctuary; the appearance of the one as the

appearance of the other. The altar of wood was three cubits high, and the length thereof two cubits; and the corners thereof, and the length thereof, and the walls thereof, were of wood: and he said unto me, This is the table that is before the Lord. And the temple and the sanctuary had two doors. And the doors had two leaves apiece, two turning leaves; two leaves for the one door, and two leaves for the other door. And there were made on them, on the doors of the temple, cherubims and palm trees, like as were made upon the walls; and there were thick planks upon the face of the porch without. And there were narrow windows and palm trees on the one side and on the other side, on the sides of the porch, and upon the side chambers of the house, and thick planks. (Ezekiel 41:1-26)

Then he brought me forth into the utter court, the way toward the north: and he brought me into the chamber that was over against the separate place, and which was before the building toward the north. Before the length of an hundred cubits was the north door, and the breadth was fifty cubits. Over against the twenty cubits which were for the inner court, and over against the pavement which was for the utter court, was gallery against gallery in three stories. And before the chambers was a walk to ten cubits breadth inward, a way of one cubit; and their doors toward the north. Now the upper chambers were shorter: for the galleries were higher than these, than the lower, and than the middlemost of the building. For they were in three stories, but had not pillars as the pillars of the courts: therefore the building was straitened more than the lowest and the middlemost from the ground. And the wall that was without over against the chambers, toward the utter court on the forepart of

the chambers, the length thereof was fifty cubits. For the length of the chambers that were in the utter court was fifty cubits: and, lo, before the temple were an hundred cubits. And from under these chambers was the entry on the east side, as one goeth into them from the utter court. The chambers were in the thickness of the wall of the court toward the east, over against the separate place, and over against the building. And the way before them was like the appearance of the chambers which were toward the north, as long as they, and as broad as they: and all their goings out were both according to their fashions, and according to their doors. And according to the doors of the chambers that were toward the south was a door in the head of the way, even the way directly before the wall toward the east, as one entereth into them. Then said he unto me, The north chambers and the south chambers, which are before the separate place, they be holy chambers, where the priests that approach unto the Lord shall eat the most holy things: there shall they lay the most holy things, and the meat offering, and the sin offering, and the trespass offering; for the place is holy. When the priests enter therein, then shall they not go out of the holy place into the utter court, but there they shall lay their garments wherein they minister; for they are holy; and shall put on other garments, and shall approach to those things which are for the people. Now when he had made an end of measuring the inner house, he brought me forth toward the gate whose prospect is toward the east, and measured it round about. He measured the east side with the measuring reed, five hundred reeds, with the measuring reed round about. He measured the north side, five hundred reeds, with the measuring reed round about. He measured the south side, five hundred

reeds, with the measuring reed. He turned about to the west side, and measured five hundred reeds with the measuring reed. He measured it by the four sides: it had a wall round about, five hundred reeds long, and five hundred broad, to make a separation between the sanctuary and the profane place. (Ezekiel 42:1-20)

Afterward he brought me to the gate, even the gate that looketh toward the east: And, behold, the glory of the God of Israel came from the way of the east: and his voice was like a noise of many waters: and the earth shined with his glory. And it was according to the appearance of the vision which I saw, even according to the vision that I saw when I came to destroy the city: and the visions were like the vision that I saw by the river Chebar; and I fell upon my face. And the glory of the Lord came into the house by the way of the gate whose prospect is toward the east. So the spirit took me up, and brought me into the inner court; and, behold, the glory of the Lord filled the house. And I heard him speaking unto me out of the house; and the man stood by me. And he said unto me, Son of man, the place of my throne, and the place of the soles of my feet, where I will dwell in the midst of the children of Israel for ever, and my holy name, shall the house of Israel no more defile, neither they, nor their kings, by their whoredom, nor by the carcasses of their kings in their high places. In their setting of their threshold by my thresholds, and their post by my posts, and the wall between me and them, they have even defiled my holy name by their abominations that they have committed: wherefore I have consumed them in mine anger. Now let them put away their whoredom, and the carcasses of their kings, far from me, and I will dwell in the midst of them for

ever. Thou son of man, shew the house to the house of Israel, that they may be ashamed of their iniquities: and let them measure the pattern. And if they be ashamed of all that they have done, shew them the form of the house, and the fashion thereof, and the goings out thereof, and the comings in thereof, and all the forms thereof, and all the ordinances thereof, and all the forms thereof, and all the laws thereof: and write it in their sight, that they may keep the whole form thereof, and all the ordinances thereof, and do them. This is the law of the house; Upon the top of the mountain the whole limit thereof round about shall be most holy. Behold, this is the law of the house. And these are the measures of the altar after the cubits: The cubit is a cubit and an hand breadth; even the bottom shall be a cubit, and the breadth a cubit, and the border thereof by the edge thereof round about shall be a span: and this shall be the higher place of the altar. And from the bottom upon the ground even to the lower settle shall be two cubits, and the breadth one cubit; and from the lesser settle even to the greater settle shall be four cubits, and the breadth one cubit. So the altar shall be four cubits; and from the altar and upward shall be four horns. And the altar shall be twelve cubits long, twelve broad, square in the four squares thereof. And the settle shall be fourteen cubits long and fourteen broad in the four squares thereof; and the border about it shall be half a cubit; and the bottom thereof shall be a cubit about; and his stairs shall look toward the east. And he said unto me, Son of man, thus saith the Lord God; These are the ordinances of the altar in the day when they shall make it, to offer burnt offerings thereon, and to sprinkle blood thereon. And thou shalt give to the priests the Levites that be of the seed of Zadok, which

approach unto me, to minister unto me, saith the Lord God, a young bullock for a sin offering. And thou shalt take of the blood thereof, and put it on the four horns of it, and on the four corners of the settle, and upon the border round about: thus shalt thou cleanse and purge it. Thou shalt take the bullock also of the sin offering, and he shall burn it in the appointed place of the house, without the sanctuary. And on the second day thou shalt offer a kid of the goats without blemish for a sin offering; and they shall cleanse the altar, as they did cleanse it with the bullock. When thou hast made an end of cleansing it, thou shalt offer a young bullock without blemish, and a ram out of the flock without blemish. And thou shalt offer them before the Lord, and the priests shall cast salt upon them, and they shall offer them up for a burnt offering unto the Lord. Seven days shalt thou prepare every day a goat for a sin offering: they shall also prepare a young bullock, and a ram out of the flock, without blemish. Seven days shall they purge the altar and purify it; and they shall consecrate themselves. And when these days are expired, it shall be, that upon the eighth day, and so forward, the priests shall make your burnt offerings upon the altar, and your peace offerings; and I will accept you, saith the Lord God. (Ezekiel 43:1-27)

Then he brought me back the way of the gate of the outward sanctuary which looketh toward the east; and it was shut. Then said the Lord unto me; This gate shall be shut, it shall not be opened, and no man shall enter in by it; because the Lord, the God of Israel, hath entered in by it, therefore it shall be shut. It is for the prince; the prince, he shall sit in it to eat bread before the Lord; he shall enter by the way of

the porch of that gate, and shall go out by the way of the same. Then brought he me the way of the north gate before the house: and I looked, and, behold, the glory of the Lord filled the house of the Lord: and I fell upon my face. And the Lord said unto me, Son of man, mark well, and behold with thine eyes, and hear with thine ears all that I say unto thee concerning all the ordinances of the house of the Lord, and all the laws thereof; and mark well the entering in of the house, with every going forth of the sanctuary. And thou shalt say to the rebellious, even to the house of Israel, Thus saith the Lord God; O ye house of Israel, let it suffice you of all your abominations, In that ye have brought into my sanctuary strangers, uncircumcised in heart, and uncircumcised in flesh, to be in my sanctuary, to pollute it, even my house, when ye offer my bread, the fat and the blood, and they have broken my covenant because of all your abominations. And ye have not kept the charge of mine holy things: but ye have set keepers of my charge in my sanctuary for yourselves. Thus saith the Lord God; No stranger, uncircumcised in heart, nor uncircumcised in flesh, shall enter into my sanctuary, of any stranger that is among the children of Israel. And the Levites that are gone away far from me, when Israel went astray, which went astray away from me after their idols; they shall even bear their iniquity. Yet they shall be ministers in my sanctuary, having charge at the gates of the house, and ministering to the house: they shall slay the burnt offering and the sacrifice for the people, and they shall stand before them to minister unto them. Because they ministered unto them before their idols, and caused the house of Israel to fall into iniquity; therefore have I lifted up mine hand against them, saith the Lord God, and they shall bear their

iniquity. And they shall not come near unto me, to do the office of a priest unto me, nor to come near to any of my holy things, in the most holy place: but they shall bear their shame, and their abominations which they have committed. But I will make them keepers of the charge of the house, for all the service thereof, and for all that shall be done therein. But the priests the Levites, the sons of Zadok, that kept the charge of my sanctuary when the children of Israel went astray from me, they shall come near to me to minister unto me, and they shall stand before me to offer unto me the fat and the blood, saith the Lord God: They shall enter into my sanctuary, and they shall come near to my table, to minister unto me, and they shall keep my charge. And it shall come to pass, that when they enter in at the gates of the inner court, they shall be clothed with linen garments; and no wool shall come upon them, whiles they minister in the gates of the inner court, and within. They shall have linen bonnets upon their heads, and shall have linen breeches upon their loins; they shall not gird themselves with any thing that causeth sweat. And when they go forth into the utter court, even into the utter court to the people, they shall put off their garments wherein they ministered, and lay them in the holy chambers, and they shall put on other garments; and they shall not sanctify the people with their garments. Neither shall they shave their heads, nor suffer their locks to grow long; they shall only poll their heads. Neither shall any priest drink wine, when they enter into the inner court. Neither shall they take for their wives a widow, nor her that is put away: but they shall take maidens of the seed of the house of Israel, or a widow that had a priest before. And they shall teach my people the difference between the holy and profane, and cause

them to discern between the unclean and the clean. And in controversy they shall stand in judgment; and they shall judge it according to my judgments: and they shall keep my laws and my statutes in all mine assemblies; and they shall hallow my sabbaths. And they shall come at no dead person to defile themselves: but for father, or for mother, or for son, or for daughter, for brother, or for sister that hath had no husband, they may defile themselves. And after he is cleansed, they shall reckon unto him seven days. And in the day that he goeth into the sanctuary, unto the inner court, to minister in the sanctuary, he shall offer his sin offering, saith the Lord God. And it shall be unto them for an inheritance: I am their inheritance: and ye shall give them no possession in Israel: I am their possession. They shall eat the meat offering, and the sin offering, and the trespass offering: and every dedicated thing in Israel shall be theirs. And the first of all the firstfruits of all things, and every oblation of all, of every sort of your oblations, shall be the priest's: ye shall also give unto the priest the first of your dough, that he may cause the blessing to rest in thine house. The priests shall not eat of any thing that is dead of itself, or torn, whether it be fowl or beast. (Ezekiel 44:1-31)

Moreover, when ye shall divide by lot the land for inheritance, ye shall offer an oblation unto the Lord, an holy portion of the land: the length shall be the length of five and twenty thousand reeds, and the breadth shall be ten thousand. This shall be holy in all the borders thereof round about. Of this there shall be for the sanctuary five hundred in length, with five hundred in breadth, square round about; and fifty cubits round about for the suburbs thereof. And of

this measure shalt thou measure the length of five and twenty thousand, and the breadth of ten thousand: and in it shall be the sanctuary and the most holy place. The holy portion of the land shall be for the priests the ministers of the sanctuary, which shall come near to minister unto the Lord: and it shall be a place for their houses, and an holy place for the sanctuary. And the five and twenty thousand of length, and the ten thousand of breadth shall also the Levites, the ministers of the house, have for themselves, for a possession for twenty chambers. And ye shall appoint the possession of the city five thousand broad, and five and twenty thousand long, over against the oblation of the holy portion: it shall be for the whole house of Israel. And a portion shall be for the prince on the one side and on the other side of the oblation of the holy portion, and of the possession of the city, before the oblation of the holy portion, and before the possession of the city, from the west side westward, and from the east side eastward: and the length shall be over against one of the portions, from the west border unto the east border. In the land shall be his possession in Israel: and my princes shall no more oppress my people; and the rest of the land shall they give to the house of Israel according to their tribes. Thus saith the Lord God; Let it suffice you, O princes of Israel: remove violence and spoil, and execute judgment and justice, take away your exactions from my people, saith the Lord God. Ye shall have just balances, and a just ephah, and a just bath. The ephah and the bath shall be of one measure, that the bath may contain the tenth part of an homer, and the ephah the tenth part of an homer: the measure thereof shall be after the homer. And the shekel shall be twenty gerahs: twenty shekels, five and twenty shekels, fifteen shekels, shall

be your maneh. This is the oblation that ye shall offer; the sixth part of an ephah of an homer of wheat, and ye shall give the sixth part of an ephah of an homer of barley: Concerning the ordinance of oil, the bath of oil, ye shall offer the tenth part of a bath out of the cor, which is an homer of ten baths; for ten baths are an homer: And one lamb out of the flock, out of two hundred, out of the fat pastures of Israel; for a meat offering, and for a burnt offering, and for peace offerings, to make reconciliation for them, saith the Lord God. All the people of the land shall give this oblation for the prince in Israel. And it shall be the prince's part to give burnt offerings, and meat offerings, and drink offerings, in the feasts, and in the new moons, and in the sabbaths, in all solemnities of the house of Israel: he shall prepare the sin offering, and the meat offering, and the burnt offering, and the peace offerings, to make reconciliation for the house of Israel. Thus saith the Lord God; In the first month, in the first day of the month, thou shalt take a young bullock without blemish, and cleanse the sanctuary: And the priest shall take of the blood of the sin offering, and put it upon the posts of the house, and upon the four corners of the settle of the altar, and upon the posts of the gate of the inner court. And so thou shalt do the seventh day of the month for every one that erreth, and for him that is simple: so shall ye reconcile the house. In the first month, in the fourteenth day of the month, ye shall have the passover, a feast of seven days; unleavened bread shall be eaten. And upon that day shall the prince prepare for himself and for all the people of the land a bullock for a sin offering. And seven days of the feast he shall prepare a burnt offering to the Lord, seven bullocks and seven rams without blemish daily the seven days;

and a kid of the goats daily for a sin offering. And he shall prepare a meat offering of an ephah for a bullock, and an ephah for a ram, and an hin of oil for an ephah. In the seventh month, in the fifteenth day of the month, shall he do the like in the feast of the seven days, according to the sin offering, according to the burnt offering, and according to the meat offering, and according to the oil. (Ezekiel 45:1-25)

Thus saith the Lord God; The gate of the inner court that looketh toward the east shall be shut the six working days; but on the sabbath it shall be opened, and in the day of the new moon it shall be opened. And the prince shall enter by the way of the porch of that gate without, and shall stand by the post of the gate, and the priests shall prepare his burnt offering and his peace offerings, and he shall worship at the threshold of the gate: then he shall go forth; but the gate shall not be shut until the evening. Likewise the people of the land shall worship at the door of this gate before the Lord in the sabbaths and in the new moons. And the burnt offering that the prince shall offer unto the Lord in the sabbath day shall be six lambs without blemish, and a ram without blemish. And the meat offering shall be an ephah for a ram, and the meat offering for the lambs as he shall be able to give, and an hin of oil to an ephah. And in the day of the new moon it shall be a young bullock without blemish, and six lambs, and a ram: they shall be without blemish. And he shall prepare a meat offering, an ephah for a bullock, and an ephah for a ram, and for the lambs according as his hand shall attain unto, and an hin of oil to an ephah. And when the prince shall enter, he shall go in by the way of the porch of that gate, and he shall go forth by the way

thereof. But when the people of the land shall come before the Lord in the solemn feasts, he that entereth in by the way of the north gate to worship shall go out by the way of the south gate; and he that entereth by the way of the south gate shall go forth by the way of the north gate: he shall not return by the way of the gate whereby he came in, but shall go forth over against it. And the prince in the midst of them, when they go in, shall go in; and when they go forth, shall go forth. And in the feasts and in the solemnities the meat offering shall be an ephah to a bullock, and an ephah to a ram, and to the lambs as he is able to give, and an hin of oil to an ephah. Now when the prince shall prepare a voluntary burnt offering or peace offerings voluntarily unto the Lord, one shall then open him the gate that looketh toward the east, and he shall prepare his burnt offering and his peace offerings, as he did on the sabbath day: then he shall go forth; and after his going forth one shall shut the gate. Thou shalt daily prepare a burnt offering unto the Lord of a lamb of the first year without blemish: thou shalt prepare it every morning. And thou shalt prepare a meat offering for it every morning, the sixth part of an ephah, and the third part of an hin of oil, to temper with the fine flour; a meat offering continually by a perpetual ordinance unto the Lord. Thus shall they prepare the lamb, and the meat offering, and the oil, every morning for a continual burnt offering. Thus saith the Lord God; If the prince give a gift unto any of his sons, the inheritance thereof shall be his sons'; it shall be their possession by inheritance. But if he give a gift of his inheritance to one of his servants, then it shall be his to the year of liberty; after it shall return to the prince: but his inheritance shall be his sons' for them. Moreover the prince shall not take

of the people's inheritance by oppression, to thrust them out of their possession; but he shall give his sons inheritance out of his own possession: that my people be not scattered every man from his possession. After he brought me through the entry, which was at the side of the gate, into the holy chambers of the priests, which looked toward the north: and, behold, there was a place on the two sides westward. Then said he unto me, This is the place where the priests shall boil the trespass offering and the sin offering, where they shall bake the meat offering; that they bear them not out into the utter court, to sanctify the people. Then he brought me forth into the utter court, and caused me to pass by the four corners of the court; and, behold, in every corner of the court there was a court. In the four corners of the court there were courts joined of forty cubits long and thirty broad: these four corners were of one measure. And there was a row of building round about in them, round about them four, and it was made with boiling places under the rows round about. Then said he unto me, These are the places of them that boil, where the ministers of the house shall boil the sacrifice of the people. (Ezekiel 46:1;24)

There you have it, that is Jerusalem that is above us. This is above us and they all have dominion over us. The sacrifices that they make are made with us. That is when we have things go wrong in life, this is them sacrificing us in some way or another. But this too, is why we are told that the law is a shadow of things to come.

For the law having a shadow of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect. (Hebrews 10:1)

This is also our next world. Remember how we are told that blasphemy of the Holy Ghost will not be forgiven in this world, or the world to come.

And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the world to come.
(Matthew 12:32)

But listen to what our Father is going to be doing with Jerusalem that is above. I am going to show the whole chapter but know this, I will not cut my hair.

And thou, son of man, take thee a sharp knife, take thee a barber's razor, and cause it to pass upon thine head and upon thy beard: then take thee balances to weigh, and divide the hair. Thou shalt burn with fire a third part in the midst of the city, when the days of the siege are fulfilled: and thou shalt take a third part, and smite about it with a knife: and a third part thou shalt scatter in the wind; and I will draw out a sword after them. Thou shalt also take thereof a few in number, and bind them in thy skirts. Then take of them again, and cast them into the midst of the fire, and burn them in the fire; for thereof shall a fire come forth into all the house of Israel. Thus saith the Lord God; This is Jerusalem: I have set it in the midst of the nations and countries that are round about her. And she hath changed my judgments into wickedness more than the nations, and my statutes more than the countries that are round about her: for they have refused my judgments and my statutes, they have not walked in them. Therefore thus saith the Lord God; Because ye multiplied more than the nations

that are round about you, and have not walked in my statutes, neither have kept my judgments, neither have done according to the judgments of the nations that are round about you; Therefore thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I, even I, am against thee, and will execute judgments in the midst of thee in the sight of the nations. And I will do in thee that which I have not done, and whereunto I will not do any more the like, because of all thine abominations. Therefore the fathers shall eat the sons in the midst of thee, and the sons shall eat their fathers; and I will execute judgments in thee, and the whole remnant of thee will I scatter into all the winds. Wherefore, as I live, saith the Lord God; Surely, because thou hast defiled my sanctuary with all thy detestable things, and with all thine abominations, therefore will I also diminish thee; neither shall mine eye spare, neither will I have any pity. A third part of thee shall die with the pestilence, and with famine shall they be consumed in the midst of thee: and a third part shall fall by the sword round about thee; and I will scatter a third part into all the winds, and I will draw out a sword after them. Thus shall mine anger be accomplished, and I will cause my fury to rest upon them, and I will be comforted: and they shall know that I the Lord have spoken it in my zeal, when I have accomplished my fury in them. Moreover I will make thee waste, and a reproach among the nations that are round about thee, in the sight of all that pass by. So it shall be a reproach and a taunt, an instruction and an astonishment unto the nations that are round about thee, when I shall execute judgments in thee in anger and in fury and in furious rebukes. I the Lord have spoken it. When I shall send upon them the evil arrows of famine, which shall be for their destruction, and which I will

send to destroy you: and I will increase the famine upon you, and will break your staff of bread: So will I send upon you famine and evil beasts, and they shall bereave thee: and pestilence and blood shall pass through thee; and I will bring the sword upon thee. I the Lord have spoken it. (Ezekiel 5:1-17)

But more than one king can and does have dominion over us at a time. Now we read and heard how some in Jerusalem did things which did not please the Father. Those are the kings that have dominion over some of us. These kings tell our conscience to do things in which our Father did not command. Like trying to bring those with an uncircumcised heart and being uncircumcised in the flesh into His sanctuary.

At this time, I need to say that I am not positive that this exactly how it is going to work, but I know I am being told to show this as Jerusalem above. As I am writing showing it, I am asking if I should just leave it out, but I feel that He is telling my conscience to leave it there, so I will do as I am being told. Maybe this will lead to the next book because I am hearing things that line up with this, but don't have time to wait for the proper understanding.

Now that I just stated that I will do as I am being told, we need to talk about how I am hearing our Father's voice. Have you noticed how many times we have mentioned that He told my conscience to think of certain things. That is the voice of the Father right there. His voice is your conscience. His voice is the conscience of everybody. His voice is the conscience of all the lords, all the kings, His voice is the conscience of the angels. His voice is the conscience of all those that have dominion over us. So, now let us listen to when we can hear many characteristics of His voice.

Give unto the Lord, O ye mighty, give unto the Lord glory and strength. Give unto the Lord the glory due unto his name; worship the Lord in the beauty of holiness. The voice of the Lord is upon the waters:

the God of glory thundereth: the Lord is upon many waters. The voice of the Lord is powerful; the voice of the Lord is full of majesty. The voice of the Lord breaketh the cedars; yea, the Lord breaketh the cedars of Lebanon. He maketh them also to skip like a calf; Lebanon and Sirion like a young unicorn. The voice of the Lord divideth the flames of fire. The voice of the Lord shaketh the wilderness; the Lord shaketh the wilderness of Kadesh. The voice of the Lord maketh the hinds to calve, and discovereth the forests: and in his temple doth every one speak of his glory. The Lord sitteth upon the flood; yea, the Lord sitteth King for ever. The Lord will give strength unto his people; the Lord will bless his people with peace.(Psalm 29:1-11)

Now I truly understand why our Father will not share His glory with anyone or anything.

I am the Lord: that is my name: and my glory will I not give to another, neither my praise to graven images. (Isaiah 42:8)

He is the Mastermind behind all of this. This is kind of like an assembly line if you will. It starts with the Father, then it works all the way down to us. He is the one that has orchestrated all of this. To put it in a physical perspective, let us think of an automobile manufacturing plant. By doing a simple google search, I can see that there are about thirty thousand different parts that go into one car. Somebody had to figure out how to get all those parts together, then make them work together. Then somebody had to figure out how to place all those parts into this car in order. Like trying to put the windows in before you had a shell to put them in. You can't put the door handles on if you do not have doors. The brake lights will not work if you don't put fuses and wiring in the car. But yet there are millions of well-functioning

cars on the road every day. To give the glory to another would be like giving you or me the glory for inventing the car.

Back to His voice being our conscience. But here is the catch, your imagination is Satan, the devil, or the serpent as we showed earlier. They are right next to each other in each of us. We are told this, without being told this in the book of Job.

Now there was a day when the sons of God came to present themselves before the Lord, and Satan came also among them. And the Lord said unto Satan, Whence comest thou? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, From going to and fro in the earth, and from walking up and down in it. And the Lord said unto Satan, Hast thou considered my servant Job, that there is none like him in the earth, a perfect and an upright man, one that feareth God, and escheweth evil? Then Satan answered the Lord, and said, Doth Job fear God for nought? (Job 1:6-9)

Even after the Father taught me this, I caught myself doing this a few times last night as I was driving. It was like, all of a sudden I would start thinking of how it will be once the Father reveals me. I caught myself, and then said to myself, that is my imagination, and then I told the Father that I was sorry. Because I remember how I got to feeling about that. Then the next time it happened, I just said get thee behind me Satan. And it seemed to work. I got to confess, this is a new concept for me as well, I had no idea that the serpent is our imagination.

This is where I want to talk about how the Father tells us that if we come into wealth, that we should not think we got it on our own.

And thou say in thine heart, My power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth. But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth, that he may establish

his covenant which he sware unto thy fathers, as it is this day.(Deuteronomy 8:17-18)

It is His voice in which leads people in a way that they may get wealthy. It is His voice which leads anyone to do what they do for a living whether it brings someone wealth, or poverty. He is the one in charge of it all.

Now we need to talk about Jerusalem a bit more. I think I mentioned before that more than one king can have dominion over us. When we are listening to the Bible and hear of a king that reigned in Jerusalem, it is talking about the Jerusalem that is above us. We do not have one king that has dominion over us from the time we are born in the flesh until we die. We can have a few, or many and I think sometimes we have more than one that has dominion over us at a time. Okay, we have one king that causes each of us to go to work. Using truck drivers, this is one king that tells our conscience to drive a truck. If someone get into this line of work and that is not where the Father wants them, something will happen that will cause them to stop driving a truck. This goes for all manners of work.

Now when this concept first starting to come to me, I realized that these kings reigned over Israel, but Israel is spread throughout the world. Israel is a people and not a nation.

And the Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from the one end of the earth even unto the other; and there thou shalt serve other gods, which neither thou nor thy fathers have known, even wood and stone.
(Deuteronomy 28:64)

And I will scatter you among the heathen, and will draw out a sword after you: and your land shall be desolate, and your cities waste.(Leviticus 26;33)

Israel is a scattered sheep; the lions have driven him away: first the king of Assyria hath devoured him; and

last this Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon hath broken his bones. (Jeremiah 50:17)

How could these kings reign over all of Israel unless it is from Jerusalem above? Bible scholars and theologians look at the Bible as past tense, however, as we are leaning, the Bible is about us and the kings that reign over Israel in the Old Testament, are the kings that reign over us. Just listen to how this king has dominion over many that do things that God never commanded.

And walked in the statutes of the heathen, whom the Lord cast out from before the children of Israel, and of the kings of Israel, which they had made. And the children of Israel did secretly those things that were not right against the Lord their God, and they built them high places in all their cities, from the tower of the watchmen to the fenced city. And they set them up images and groves in every high hill, and under every green tree: And there they burnt incense in all the high places, as did the heathen whom the Lord carried away before them; and wrought wicked things to provoke the Lord to anger: For they served idols, whereof the Lord had said unto them, Ye shall not do this thing. Yet the Lord testified against Israel, and against Judah, by all the prophets, and by all the seers, saying, Turn ye from your evil ways, and keep my commandments and my statutes, according to all the law which I commanded your fathers, and which I sent to you by my servants the prophets. Notwithstanding they would not hear, but hardened their necks, like to the neck of their fathers, that did not believe in the Lord their God. And they rejected his statutes, and his covenant that he made with their fathers, and his testimonies which he testified against them; and they followed vanity, and became vain, and

went after the heathen that were round about them, concerning whom the Lord had charged them, that they should not do like them. And they left all the commandments of the Lord their God, and made them molten images, even two calves, and made a grove, and worshipped all the host of heaven, and served Baal. And they caused their sons and their daughters to pass through the fire, and used divination and enchantments, and sold themselves to do evil in the sight of the Lord, to provoke him to anger. Therefore the Lord was very angry with Israel, and removed them out of his sight: there was none left but the tribe of Judah only. (2 Kings 17:8-18)

I am going to just throw a curve ball in here. There is no such thing as B. C. or A. D. How could there be if we are told that I only appear once in the end of the world, and I am here now? I guess A. D. comes after I die.

I am now on the fourth time of listening to the Bible since the Father revealed this newfound knowledge unto me. And as usual, the more I listen, the more I understand. Now I am going to try and paint a picture in your mind. The Father is the head of this Jerusalem above us. This Jerusalem is humongous, it is above the entire earth. All these kings, lords, gods, etc. all reside there so to speak. Now I told you all that the Father has the ultimate dominion earlier in the chapter. But because of our iniquities, He has sold us over to these kings and such. Let us listen to a couple of times that we can hear this.

And the children of Israel did evil again in the sight of the Lord, and served Baalim, and Ashtaroth, and the gods of Syria, and the gods of Zidon, and the gods of Moab, and the gods of the children of Ammon, and the gods of the Philistines, and forsook the Lord, and served not him. And the anger of the Lord was hot against Israel, and he sold them into the hands of

the Philistines, and into the hands of the children of Ammon. And that year they vexed and oppressed the children of Israel: eighteen years, all the children of Israel that were on the other side Jordan in the land of the Amorites, which is in Gilead. Moreover the children of Ammon passed over Jordan to fight also against Judah, and against Benjamin, and against the house of Ephraim; so that Israel was sore distressed. And the children of Israel cried unto the Lord, saying, We have sinned against thee, both because we have forsaken our God, and also served Baalim. And the Lord said unto the children of Israel, Did not I deliver you from the Egyptians, and from the Amorites, from the children of Ammon, and from the Philistines? The Zidonians also, and the Amalekites, and the Maonites, did oppress you; and ye cried to me, and I delivered you out of their hand. Yet ye have forsaken me, and served other gods: wherefore I will deliver you no more. Go and cry unto the gods which ye have chosen; let them deliver you in the time of your tribulation. (Judges 10:6-14)

And the children of Israel again did evil in the sight of the Lord, when Ehud was dead. And the Lord sold them into the hand of Jabin king of Canaan, that reigned in Hazor; the captain of whose host was Sisera, which dwelt in Harosheth of the Gentiles. (Judges 4:1-2)

This is not because He is mean, cruel, or vindictive, it is because man refuses to listen to Him and His perfect ways. Man continues to try to do this their own way thinking that they can obtain His perfection by ignoring Him. Now I need to share what He told me as I was doing my exercise this evening, and this might be bothersome.

He is the leader of Jerusalem. He has told me to sit on His right side while He makes His enemies His footstool.

The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou at my right hand, until I make thine enemies thy footstool.
(Psalm 110:1)

Now picture this. He is sitting on the top of Jerusalem and Jerusalem encompasses the entire earth. Now listen to what He says about the earth.

Thus saith the Lord, The heaven is my throne, and the earth is my footstool: where is the house that ye build unto me? and where is the place of my rest?
(Isaiah 66:1)

So, I asked the Father who reigned over me for the first forty years of my life. The first one that came to my conscience is King Saul. He reigned in Jerusalem for forty years. Then I thought maybe of Solomon because he had so many wives, and I have been with a fair share of women. Yes, consensual sex makes a marriage in our Father's eyes. Not near as many as Solomon, but a lot before I was baptized. But then king Saul keeps coming back to mind.

So, I got to wondering which king had dominion over me after that. Then I am thinking it was Solomon because he encouraged Israel to keep the laws of Moses. And as I have shown you all, I kept the law of Moses for almost five years after being called to the Bible in 2011. But then I was given over to the king Ahab which wound up marrying Jezebel. Jezebel is the woman spoke of in Revelation two that our Father used to get me to know who I was as I told you all about earlier. This is when I started going after the same gods that she worshipped. And that is why I think Ahab had dominion over me until I was baptized with the Holy Ghost in March of 2016. Then the Almighty King, the Father took over and that is when I became His.

PRECEPT SEVEN

But now thus saith the Lord that created thee, O Jacob, and he that formed thee, O Israel, Fear not: for I have redeemed thee, I have called thee by thy name; thou art mine. (Isaiah 43:1)

It is up to each individual to ask our Father about the kings in which have dominion over them. But the kings of the Old testament are the kings in which have had and do have dominion over us today. And when they die, as shown in the scriptures, is when they stop having dominion over each individual person. But they do not physically die. Remember everything about our Father is spiritual.

Now I am not sure if these characteristics we are getting ready to post are some that have dominion over us, or if it is just simply iniquity having dominion over a person.

This I say therefore, and testify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind, Having the understanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, because of the blindness of their heart. Who being past feeling have given themselves over unto lasciviousness, to work all uncleanness with greediness. (Ephesians 4:17-19)

And changed the glory of the uncorruptible God into an image made like to corruptible man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts, and creeping things. Wherefore God also gave them up to uncleanness through the lusts of their own hearts, to dishonour their own bodies between themselves: Who changed the truth of God into a lie, and worshipped and served the creature more than the Creator, who is blessed for ever. Amen.(Romans 1:23-25)

Now I need to tell you all about a dream that Livia had. She first told me about this about two weeks ago or so. She told me that she had a dream the she and I were harvesting some cabbage, but the cabbage had worms in it. The first thing that came to mind for me is the harvest is the end of the world.

The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels.
(Matthew 13:39)

Now I had my guard up because I have told her before about how God gives us our instructions in a dream as we sleep, and I wasn't sure at first, if this was real or not.

For God speaketh once, yea twice, yet man perceiveth it not. In a dream, in a vision of the night, when deep sleep falleth upon men, in slumberings upon the bed; Then he openeth the ears of men, and sealeth their instruction, That he may withdraw man from his purpose, and hide pride from man. He keepeth back his soul from the pit, and his life from perishing by the sword.(Job 33:14-18)

Because I know what is inside everybody, that being Satan, I pretty much just let it go.

But Jesus did not commit himself unto them, because he knew all men, And needed not that any should testify of man: for he knew what was in man.
(John 2:24-25)

I have shown you all and we all know that we are the temple of God. Now listen to who sits in the temple of God.

Let no man deceive you by any means: for that day shall not come, except there come a falling away first,

and that man of sin be revealed, the son of perdition; Who opposeth and exalteth himself above all that is called God, or that is worshipped; so that he as God sitteth in the temple of God, shewing himself that he is God. (2 Thessalonians 2:3-4)

Then just the other day I called her to make a payment. She asked me to give her a quick rundown of all this newfound knowledge that I am putting in the book. So I did and she brought this dream up again. Now with it being a couple weeks later, I started to wonder if the Father was trying to say something to me through her.

So, I got to thinking about it, and it occurred to me that she was talking about how the bad seed is growing with the good until the harvest.

Then Jesus sent the multitude away, and went into the house: and his disciples came unto him, saying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field. He answered and said unto them, He that soweth the good seed is the Son of man; The field is the world; the good seed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked one; The enemy that sowed them is the devil; the harvest is the end of the world; and the reapers are the angels. As therefore the tares are gathered and burned in the fire; so shall it be in the end of this world. The Son of man shall send forth his angels, and they shall gather out of his kingdom all things that offend, and them which do iniquity; And shall cast them into a furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. Then shall the righteous shine forth as the sun in the kingdom of their Father. Who hath ears to hear, let him hear. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto treasure hid in a field; the which when a man hath found, he hideth, and for joy thereof goeth and

selleth all that he hath, and buyeth that field. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a merchant man, seeking goodly pearls: Who, when he had found one pearl of great price, went and sold all that he had, and bought it. Again, the kingdom of heaven is like unto a net, that was cast into the sea, and gathered of every kind: Which, when it was full, they drew to shore, and sat down, and gathered the good into vessels, but cast the bad away. So shall it be at the end of the world: the angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: there shall be wailing and gnashing of teeth. (Matthew 13:36-50)

Then I was driving through North Dakota and Montana at the end of January and the beginning of February with the temperatures being in the high fifties and low sixties. I was thinking this is unheard of. Then I started to think that maybe summer is coming sooner than we think. Then the Father ask me, what scriptures does this make you think of. And the first thing that came to mind is the days will be cut short for the elects sake.

For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened. (Matthew 24:21-22)

I think He is telling me that summer is coming sooner than we think this year, but this too, could just be Him telling me how to do this area in the chapter. I am not trying to get ahead of Him anymore.

Now we need to go back to the beginning of the Bible so that we can hear and see how the Father did this.

PRECEPT SEVEN

And the Lord God said unto the serpent, Because thou hast done this, thou art cursed above all cattle, and above every beast of the field; upon thy belly shalt thou go, and dust shalt thou eat all the days of thy life:(Genesis 3:14)

This is the Father bounding the serpent, the devil, or Satan up inside of us after we got kicked out of the Garden of Eden. Now God told the serpent that he would eat dust all the days of his life, so we are going to verify that we eat dirt all the days of our lives. By doing a quick google search.

roughly six pounds As it turns out, the average person ingests about 100 milligrams of dirt every single day. Overall, that equates to roughly six pounds of dirt in an average lifespan! That's right, dirt is actually a pretty common staple of the human diet. Apr 29, 2015 Strange Facts - The Average Person Eats 6 Lbs of Dirthealthcaredailyonline.com<https://www.healthcaredailyonline.com> › Blog

I know that we have shown this google search in previous books, but now we have not shown that the scripture verify this as well. Now we need to listen to when we can hear that dirt comes out of someone talked about in the Bible for verification.

And he brought the present unto Eglon king of Moab: and Eglon was a very fat man. And when he had made an end to offer the present, he sent away the people that bare the present. But he himself turned again from the quarries that were by Gilgal, and said, I have a secret errand unto thee, O king: who said, Keep silence. And all that stood by him went out from him. And Ehud came unto him; and he was sitting in a summer parlour, which he had for himself alone.

And Ehud said, I have a message from God unto thee. And he arose out of his seat. And Ehud put forth his left hand, and took the dagger from his right thigh, and thrust it into his belly: And the haft also went in after the blade; and the fat closed upon the blade, so that he could not draw the dagger out of his belly; and the dirt came out. (Judges 3:17-22)

How did dirt come out of king Eglon if the flesh is not Satan, or the son of perdition. But this is the way our Father designed all of this. He did this so that the only way we will get back into the Garden of Eden, is by truly seeking Him and His perfect ways. So, this dream that Livia had is the Father telling me to show how man, or the stars, have been growing along side with Satan until the harvest, or the end of the world. We have learned that we eat dust all the days of our lives. We have learned how dirt came out of Eglon's belly. Now let us listen to how the dust has a voice as well.

And thou shalt be brought down, and shalt speak out of the ground, and thy speech shall be low out of the dust, and thy voice shall be, as of one that hath a familiar spirit, out of the ground, and thy speech shall whisper out of the dust. (Isaiah 29:4)

We have learned that the voice of the Father is our conscience, but now we are seeing that the dust or dirt within us has a voice as well. That voice is our imagination. Now as I told you all, this is a new concept for me as well. Just last night as I was driving, my imagination got the best of me for a couple of minutes. Let me explain because this really shows how easy our imagination can and will take over the show.

I was working on the book before my shift started. All the sudden, everything on my word program went blank. I couldn't figure out why because I have the pages displayed on the left and they were all fine. But the pages that I was working on, went completely blank. Then I

realized it was a few minutes past the time in which I needed to get going. So, I just figured this was a way that the Father was telling me to get off my butt, and get ready to go.

I did just that, but when I started driving, I put the radio on country music for a while instead of turning on the Bible right away. I have told you all in previous books, if I am up at night, I like to look on Bible Gateway to see what the verse of the day is for tomorrow. Just so I can get an idea of what our Father wants me to be thinking about. Well, my phone is mounted on my dash as I am driving, so it is hands free. All I have to do is touch the screen on the Bible Gateway app and there it is. Well, last night it wouldn't come through, so now the laptop had done what it did, the app wouldn't show the verse of the day, I started to think that maybe the Father was making it so that I couldn't finish this book.

I started to get mad, said a swear word, which I am trying to repent from doing, and started to freak out a bit. And even turned the radio to the rock station. Now this is downright weird timing. The second I put the radio on the rock station, a song was just starting. And the name of this song is *The Devil You Know* by Tim Montana. Just the timing of it alone was enough to get me to start thinking about what I was doing.

And this is new for me because within just a couple of minutes, my conscience started thinking about all the conversations that are in the book, the secrets this book is revealing, how it was the Father that caused me to ask Livia about the book fair, how the Father told me that He would make time for me to get the book done, and how the Father would not just do all of that just to make it impossible for me to write this book. I calmed down immediately. Then after about ten minutes or so, I was thinking about how I started to think of the reasons as to why the Father wouldn't do this. So, then I asked Him, was that you reminding of all that I was thinking of. And the reply I got was, yes. It was my voice telling you that you were letting your imagination get the best of you.

Now I want to talk a second about how the Father told me that He would make sure I had to time to get this book done. If memory

serves me correctly, He told me this on Last Wednesday evening as I was on the stair climber. At that time, the deadline to have this manuscript submitted was the following Monday, February fifth, today. Last Friday I got an email from the publishing company telling me that the deadline is now on Wednesday the seventh, which we will be sending it in on Wednesday.

Now is when we need to be talking about the exorcism of Emily Rose. The movie that we referred to in the very beginning of this chapter. As we showed that movie is based off a true story. But she said one, two, three, four, five, six, she said this three times. Remember the number of a man.

Here is wisdom. Let him that hath understanding count the number of the beast: for it is the number of a man; and his number is Six hundred threescore and six. (Revelation 13:18)

She said I am the one that dwells within and then she said we are the ones that dwell within. Satan is inside of man and there is nothing anyone can do about it. Remember how we showed that we are living in Satan's kingdom? We just showed that man's belly is where Satan is bound up in, so how is Satan going to cast out Satan?

But when the Pharisees heard it, they said, This fellow doth not cast out devils, but by Beelzebub the prince of the devils. And Jesus knew their thoughts, and said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation; and every city or house divided against itself shall not stand: And if Satan cast out Satan, he is divided against himself; how shall then his kingdom stand? (Matthew 12:24-26)

So, now let us talk about all the supposed exorcisms that people do. What is the one thing that they all do? They all use some kind of cross that is made with hands. They will use all kinds of physical

PRECEPT SEVEN

things that are made with hands thinking that these objects have some kind of power. So, now let us listen to the second commandment.

Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image, or any likeness of any thing that is in heaven above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the water under the earth. Thou shalt not bow down thyself to them, nor serve them: for I the Lord thy God am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of them that hate me; (Exodus 20:4-5)

These crosses that these people use to try to cast out Satan, or evil spirits is a graven image. So, they are using something that Satan told them that it is okay to have, to try and cast out Satan himself. God the Father told us not to make any graven image, so it is the imagination of people that tells them that it is okay to have these things. Then they wind up serving these graven images instead of serving God.

Confounded be all they that serve graven images, that boast themselves of idols: worship him, all ye gods.
(Psalm 97:7)

Now at the end of that movie, Emily was given a choice to live with a lot of pain, if I remember correctly, or to die to show the people. She chose to die. I know that our Father had a movie made out of this because our Father has been trying to show us the truth in many ways. But people would rather listen to their imaginations instead of Him.

So, when they do these exorcisms, they are actually trying to cast God the Father out of a person. I truly believe when these people need what people call an exorcism, it is God the Father trying to get the person that needs the exorcism, to turn back to Him and His ways. But because people listen to their imaginations, they think of it as being a evil spirit that is causing this person to be the way they are. Because man does not want to hear about God.

Now we need to be listening to a few areas that we can hear that this is the way God has purposed it and that there is nothing anyone can do about it.

The Lord of hosts hath sworn, saying, Surely as I have thought, so shall it come to pass; and as I have purposed, so shall it stand: That I will break the Assyrian in my land, and upon my mountains tread him under foot: then shall his yoke depart from off them, and his burden depart from off their shoulders. This is the purpose that is purposed upon the whole earth: and this is the hand that is stretched out upon all the nations. For the Lord of hosts hath purposed, and who shall disannul it? and his hand is stretched out, and who shall turn it back?(Isaiah 14:24-27)

The burden of Tyre. Howl, ye ships of Tarshish; for it is laid waste, so that there is no house, no entering in: from the land of Chittim it is revealed to them. Be still, ye inhabitants of the isle; thou whom the merchants of Zidon, that pass over the sea, have replenished. And by great waters the seed of Sihor, the harvest of the river, is her revenue; and she is a mart of nations. Be thou ashamed, O Zidon: for the sea hath spoken, even the strength of the sea, saying, I travail not, nor bring forth children, neither do I nourish up young men, nor bring up virgins. As at the report concerning Egypt, so shall they be sorely pained at the report of Tyre. Pass ye over to Tarshish; howl, ye inhabitants of the isle. Is this your joyous city, whose antiquity is of ancient days? her own feet shall carry her afar off to sojourn. Who hath taken this counsel against Tyre, the crowning city, whose merchants are princes, whose traffickers are the honourable of the earth? The Lord of hosts hath purposed it, to stain

the pride of all glory, and to bring into contempt all the honourable of the earth. (Isaiah 23:1-9)

Bel boweth down, Nebo stoopeth, their idols were upon the beasts, and upon the cattle: your carriages were heavy laden; they are a burden to the weary beast. They stoop, they bow down together; they could not deliver the burden, but themselves are gone into captivity. Hearken unto me, O house of Jacob, and all the remnant of the house of Israel, which are borne by me from the belly, which are carried from the womb: And even to your old age I am he; and even to hoar hairs will I carry you: I have made, and I will bear; even I will carry, and will deliver you. To whom will ye liken me, and make me equal, and compare me, that we may be like? They lavish gold out of the bag, and weigh silver in the balance, and hire a goldsmith; and he maketh it a god: they fall down, yea, they worship. They bear him upon the shoulder, they carry him, and set him in his place, and he standeth; from his place shall he not remove: yea, one shall cry unto him, yet can he not answer, nor save him out of his trouble. Remember this, and shew yourselves men: bring it again to mind, O ye transgressors. Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me, Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure: Calling a ravenous bird from the east, the man that executeth my counsel from a far country: yea, I have spoken it, I will also bring it to pass; I have purposed it, I will also do it. Hearken unto me, ye stouthearted, that are far from righteousness: I bring near my righteousness; it shall not be far off, and my salvation shall not tarry:

and I will place salvation in Zion for Israel my glory.
(Isaiah 46:1-13)

Man cannot undo what God has done. If man was able to cast out Satan, his kingdom would not stand. The Father brought something to my mind the other day. I think I can truly relate to these so-called exorcisms. Let me explain: I told you all how my brother told me that I should go to a hospital and put on drugs, and then if I still heard God, then He would believe that God was really talking to me. Yes, that is when I told my brother that thou shall not temp thy Lord God. Not to the extremes, but that was kind of like my brother wanting to do a version of an exorcism on me. Because he didn't want me to be able to hear our Father in the way that I do.

Now I want to talk about how people use a Ouija board. When I was a teenager, I would play around on one of these things. Obviously, I knew nothing as I do now way back then. But these evil spirits that people think the Ouija board brings are within us. That is what gets the thing to move that people place their fingers on.

But God said do not talk to the dead. Don't have anything to do with witchcraft, or do not visit anyone with a familiar spirit.

Regard not them that have familiar spirits, neither seek after wizards, to be defiled by them: I am the Lord your God. (Leviticus 19:31)

And the soul that turneth after such as have familiar spirits, and after wizards, to go a whoring after them, I will even set my face against that soul, and will cut him off from among his people. (Leviticus 20:6)

Manasseh was twelve years old when he began to reign, and he reigned fifty and five years in Jerusalem: But did that which was evil in the sight of the Lord, like unto the abominations of the heathen, whom the Lord had cast out before the children of Israel.

PRECEPT SEVEN

For he built again the high places which Hezekiah his father had broken down, and he reared up altars for Baalim, and made groves, and worshipped all the host of heaven, and served them. Also he built altars in the house of the Lord, whereof the Lord had said, In Jerusalem shall my name be for ever. And he built altars for all the host of heaven in the two courts of the house of the Lord. And he caused his children to pass through the fire in the valley of the son of Hinnom: also he observed times, and used enchantments, and used witchcraft, and dealt with a familiar spirit, and with wizards: he wrought much evil in the sight of the Lord, to provoke him to anger. (2 Chronicles 33:1-6)

Yes, this is one of the kings that has dominion over some. He observes times, which would be birthdays and holidays. He sought wisdom from means other than the Bible. When people do this, they are doing something that the Father commanded them not. And when they do this, He will sometimes send them a grand delusion that they might believe a lie.

And then shall that Wicked be revealed, whom the Lord shall consume with the spirit of his mouth, and shall destroy with the brightness of his coming: Even him, whose coming is after the working of Satan with all power and signs and lying wonders, And with all deceivableness of unrighteousness in them that perish; because they received not the love of the truth, that they might be saved. And for this cause God shall send them strong delusion, that they should believe a lie: That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleasure in unrighteousness. (2 Thessalonians 2:8-12)

I believe these are the things that people start to see around them after they continue to play around with the Quija board. Because they seek not the Father for wisdom. Remember there is no power but the power of God.

Let every soul be subject unto the higher powers.
For there is no power but of God: the powers that be
are ordained of God. Whosoever therefore resisteth
the power, resisteth the ordinance of God: and they
that resist shall receive to themselves damnation.
(Romans 13:1-2)

Now we need to talk about how Livia dreamed that we were harvesting the cabbage. When the harvest begins, it will not be done quickly. It will be something like when a farmer of a few thousand acres harvest his or her crops, it takes a little time. So, with the harvest being done from above being done throughout the entire world, it will also take some time. Let us listen to what it will be like during the harvest.

If you remember we heard the scriptures say that the bad seed will be taken first. The angels shall come forth, and sever the wicked from among the just, And shall cast them into the furnace of fire: Yes, I just copied part of that verse, but this is not going to be exactly how it sounds. When these angels come forth to sever the wicked, the consciences will be on fire. It will seem that nothing is going right. Life for them will become miserable.

I can now speak to this with firsthand experience. When I started listening to the Bible back in 2015, I quickly became addicted to it. Unbeknownst to me, that is when I started to ascend into a level of heaven. Then when I stopped listening, I descended down into hell, and nothing seemed to be going right.

I believe this is when Satan will be loosed because he will know that he only has a short time. This is when we need to listen to when we are told there will be five months of torment again.

And the fifth angel sounded, and I saw a star fall from heaven unto the earth: and to him was given the key of the bottomless pit. And he opened the bottomless pit; and there arose a smoke out of the pit, as the smoke of a great furnace; and the sun and the air were darkened by reason of the smoke of the pit. And there came out of the smoke locusts upon the earth: and unto them was given power, as the scorpions of the earth have power. And it was commanded them that they should not hurt the grass of the earth, neither any green thing, neither any tree; but only those men which have not the seal of God in their foreheads. And to them it was given that they should not kill them, but that they should be tormented five months: and their torment was as the torment of a scorpion, when he striketh a man. And in those days shall men seek death, and shall not find it; and shall desire to die, and death shall flee from them. (Revelation 9:1-6)

This will be five months that people will have their consciences seared with a hot Iron. But at the same time, this will also be the time in which everybody will have the chance to turn back to the Father and start to listen to Him instead of their imagination. The death that flees from them is the first death. Once people start listening to the Father, the dead in Christ will rise and get back into the Garden of Eden.

This is when our Father will reunite all of Israel.

The word of the Lord came again unto me, saying, Moreover, thou son of man, take thee one stick, and write upon it, For Judah, and for the children of Israel his companions: then take another stick, and write upon it, For Joseph, the stick of Ephraim and for all the house of Israel his companions: And join them one to another into one stick; and they shall become

one in thine hand. And when the children of thy people shall speak unto thee, saying, Wilt thou not shew us what thou meanest by these? Say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I will take the stick of Joseph, which is in the hand of Ephraim, and the tribes of Israel his fellows, and will put them with him, even with the stick of Judah, and make them one stick, and they shall be one in mine hand. And the sticks whereon thou writest shall be in thine hand before their eyes. And say unto them, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I will take the children of Israel from among the heathen, whither they be gone, and will gather them on every side, and bring them into their own land: And I will make them one nation in the land upon the mountains of Israel; and one king shall be king to them all: and they shall be no more two nations, neither shall they be divided into two kingdoms any more at all. Neither shall they defile themselves any more with their idols, nor with their detestable things, nor with any of their transgressions: but I will save them out of all their dwellingplaces, wherein they have sinned, and will cleanse them: so shall they be my people, and I will be their God. And David my servant shall be king over them; and they all shall have one shepherd: they shall also walk in my judgments, and observe my statutes, and do them. And they shall dwell in the land that I have given unto Jacob my servant, wherein your fathers have dwelt; and they shall dwell therein, even they, and their children, and their children's children for ever: and my servant David shall be their prince for ever. Moreover I will make a covenant of peace with them; it shall be an everlasting covenant with them: and I will place them, and multiply them, and will set my sanctuary in the midst of them for evermore. My

PRECEPT SEVEN

tabernacle also shall be with them: yea, I will be their God, and they shall be my people. And the heathen shall know that I the Lord do sanctify Israel, when my sanctuary shall be in the midst of them for evermore. (Ezekiel 37:15-28)

The woman that has had five husbands.

I am taking this chapter out of the fifth book, *At Midnight I Will Rise*. This will lead us into the next chapter because when this happened, it was the powers of heaven starting to shake. But at the time this happened, and when I wrote this chapter, I had no idea that this was what was happening. I just found it to be fascinating that this happened in real time. I will not go through it and modify, or change anything. I do this because I do not want the reader to think that I try to cover my mistakes if and when I make mistakes.

This chapter will not be that long nor will be jumping all over the Bible. We are doing a chapter on this because this is something that is well known in the Bible and this scripture was fulfilled in November of 2020. What I am going to do is tell you of a couple of days I had at work, then we will be looking at part of one particular chapter of the Bible so that the world will see and hear how this didn't happen years ago. You will be seeing how this happened in November of 2020. You will also notice how they above, truly have dominion over each of us.

I was heading west on interstate 40 in New Mexico, knowing that I would need to take a half hour break soon to abide by the federal laws. I was thinking that maybe I would stop at a Walmart to get some things while on this break, but I wasn't sure if this Walmart had truck parking or not. As I passed it, I noticed that they did, but I was already passing the exit. I am thinking no big deal for I will just stop on the way back. This was only about a month after I came to work for this company, so I was not sure of what Walmart had truck parking or not. I knew that I was going to California and then coming back the same way but now I know that I can stop there later.

I had been watching the Global Positioning System (GPS), so I knew there was a Loves truck stop just a few more miles down the road. So, I figured that I would just pull in there and fix a sandwich and make a pot of coffee on my break. I was parked sitting in the bunk, eating a roast beef sandwich when I noticed this red truck pulling in and getting ready to park close to mine. I made eye contact with the female driver of a red truck, right before she set up to park. Not giving much thought to it and being at ease, not worrying about her hitting my truck as she parks. I finished eating and such. The thirty-minute break was up, so now I get back into the driver's seat, start the truck getting ready to drive a few more hours.

All the sudden I hear a voice call out my company name on the CB radio. If you are not familiar with what a CB is, it is a Citizens Band Radio that we truck driver use often to talk to one another out here on the road. I turn down the radio, ask what was that? Now I am looking around to see if I can see who as talking to me. I turn my head to the right, noticing that it was the female driver that I made eye contact with, she was two spaces to my right. She asked me something and I was not sure of what she asked, so I got out of my truck with it idling to walk over and see what she needed.

Beings how our Father has been teaching for a few years now, I know sometimes things like this happen to bring up a conversation about the Bible. She immediately asked me about working for the company I am with and how I liked it. She was inquiring about maybe seeking a job with the same company. Yes, I drive a fairly fancy truck now and it does get some attention. I told her that I was here for I feel our Father told me to come here. And within just a few minutes, I asked her if she was spiritual. At the same time, telling her that I am married to God. I do this a lot when first starting conversation with a woman so that her conscience can and will be at ease knowing that there is no chance of me hitting on her.

For thy Maker is thine husband; the Lord of hosts
is his name; and thy Redeemer the Holy One of

Israel; The God of the whole earth shall he be called.
(Isaiah 54:5)

The truck had shut off already for it only idles for about four minutes. We started talking about different things in the Bible and such. As I have told you all in previous books, if we cannot converse about the Bible, or our Father, the conversation will not last long. I was telling her about all that our Father had been teaching me. I was standing outside about five feet away from her window. She stayed in the truck as we talked. I am assuming that it was an hour into the conversation or so when she told me that she was going to stop at Walmart but wasn't sure if they had truck parking. She said she noticed that they did as she was passing the exit. She too, decide to break at the same truck stop. She, however, was there for her full ten-hour break. We both found it to be strange that both of us did the same thing.

Neither one of us was paying attention to how much time was going by. During the conversation she mentioned that she had been married four times. Knowing what I shown you all in previous books, I told her that we all have many wives and husbands. Then of course, I explained that there is nowhere in the Bible that we are told to make a marriage legal by going to pastor, preacher, or judge. We are married in our Father's eyes by just have consensual sex with someone, or by getting to know them in a sexual manner. It cannot be rape or forced.

Knowing after the fact, about four hours into the conversation, I kept hearing this, it was like I was hearing it in my conscience, I kept hearing five, five, five, five. With me being a little stunned, if you will, and not knowing for sure why I was hearing this in my mind. I told her that I think that I am being told that John five is being fulfilled as we speak. I asked within myself, could this really be happening? Right after I told her this, I made the comment that she said that she only had four husbands. I was connecting the scriptures, but because I was hearing this five, five, five, in my mind, I got a little sidetracked, if you will.

Now I am not sure if I had already given her the first three books our Father and I had written or not. The fourth book was done, but I was still waiting to get my first copies in hand. So, I could only give her the first three because the new publisher had just got the print done. I can't remember if I gave her the books before I kept hearing this five, five, five, in my mind or if I gave them to her after. We had been talking for quite awhile now.

I mentioned that I was pretty thirsty for we had been doing all this talking while I was standing outside smoking cigarettes. Yes, I explained to her about how our Father had me tell my brother if I quit smoking to try to save my life, I will lose it with Him. I will not explain it here. She offered me a water and I said no thanks because I was getting ready to get myself a cup of coffee out of truck. And I really don't like using anything that our Father has not provided for me with the money I make. That has been most of my life.

After I told her about me being told that the scriptures are being fulfilled and made the comment about her having only four husbands, she told me she lived with a pastor for twelve years. I immediately replied there is your fifth husband. Being in total awe, I immediately told her who I was and told her that if she would drink the water (knowledge or read the books) I give her, that she will never thirst again.

We noticed that we had been talking for five hours when she needed to get something, and I decided to get some coffee from my truck. We talked for another hour before we parted ways. I know it was just over a six-hour conversation because we have electronic logs in our trucks and mine said I had been off duty for just over six and half hours.

Now it was around three or four weeks later, and I had my first copies of the fourth book in my truck. These were the first ten that the publisher had sent to me so I could approve the final print. I had approved it and had ordered a hundred copies to keep in the truck with me. I pass them out to whoever I run into and talk about the Bible with if they want one. And yes, there are some people that our Father brings to me or sends me too, just for that purpose. What they

do with the book is not on me, I have done as I am being told to do. I truly believe that I am being sent to the remnant. As the scriptures say, Israel will be as the sand of the sea, but only a remnant will be saved.

For though thy people Israel be as the sand of the sea,
yet a remnant of them shall return: the consumption
decreed shall overflow with righteousness.
(Isaiah 10:22)

Now I had been talking to the company so that I could get through Davenport Iowa so that I could get an eye-exam and maybe spend a couple hours with my daughter and my grandbabies. You know, my mom and dad reincarnated as shown in the fourth book. That is shown in the second, third, and fourth, but the fourth book is the only one with the absolute correction.

I had picked up a load from our terminal in Oklahoma and was taking it to Iowa. The area I was going to is in north central Iowa. I was going up interstate 35, asking our Father where I should stop. I had way more than enough time to make the delivery on time. I started hearing to stop at a Loves Travel Center on interstate 35 about four hours away from the customer. Not in the same way that I heard five, five, five, I did as I was told to do, not questioning what I was told. This came from the obedience I have been learning. I was a little concerned for these types of truck stops don't have a lot of room for parking after it gets dark. When I arrived, I went straight to the back and found one spot open in the entire truck stop. I watched a little television to unwind from the day before going to sleep. I awoke the next morning and did my Bible thing I do before anything else.

Taking my time, I cleaned the truck up a little before going in to take a shower. After my shower I got in the truck and pulled up to the fuel island to put fuel on. There was only one lane open, so obviously, I pulled in. Now this company that I am with, wants us to put a pulp-thermometer in the back of the trailers twice a day. They do this to make sure reefer is running okay and to keep an eye on the temperature of the load. I do haul food and people eat, so the food

must be kept at proper temperature. I put the thermometer in the back of the trailer, fueled the truck. I pulled up to fill reefer tank and notice a red truck next to me. Not giving much thought to it I also noticed the number on the truck. After placing the fuel nozzle in the tank, I walked back to the back of the trailer to take a picture of the thermometer. Just as I put my hand up to open the vent door, I said within myself, there is no way, how could that be. I walked around the right side of the trailer up towards this female driver standing by her truck, waiting for the truck in front of her to move.

Sure enough, it was the same woman that I spent six hours talking to in New Mexico. Being in total shock, I caught her attention as she was complaining about the driver in front of her. After mentioning that it was nice to see her again, I asked her if she wanted a copy of the fourth book. She replied, you got them already because when we parted way before, I told her that I had no idea of when I would have them. Obviously, she wanted a copy and I as I was getting one out of the truck, she continued to tell me how the driver in front of her had been there for quite a while and she needed to get going.

I gave her a copy and the driver moved. It didn't dawn on me until right after she left for she said she needed to go. She left and it immediately hit me, if that driver would have left sooner, she would not have gotten one of the fourth books. Our Father made that driver stay there and hold there until she got the book in her hand. Everything that happens, happens for a reason and it is up to each person to ask our Father to help them understand what His will is and why this is happening the way that it is.

This is where I must remind you all, you do not know if someone is doing what they are being commanded to do or not. I have shown this in previous books, but we will listen to one verse that says it all.

But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say to his brother, Raca, shall be in danger of the council: but whosoever

shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire.
(Matthew 5:22)

Remember God dwells in each person on the planet and if you think anybody is foolish for what he or she is doing, you could be thinking that God is foolish for whatever He is doing. Now I am going to post part of John four, and I ask you to think about all that happened in this story that I just told you about. You will be noticing how a lot of what is said in John four, happened on these two days of 2020. I know I was and am still amazed on how the scriptures are being fulfilled to the letter just as we have been told they would.

When therefore the Lord knew how the Pharisees had heard that Jesus made and baptized more disciples than John, (Though Jesus himself baptized not, but his disciples,) He left Judaea, and departed again into Galilee. And he must needs go through Samaria. Then cometh he to a city of Samaria, which is called Sychar, near to the parcel of ground that Jacob gave to his son Joseph. Now Jacob's well was there. Jesus therefore, being wearied with his journey, sat thus on the well: and it was about the sixth hour. There cometh a woman of Samaria to draw water: Jesus saith unto her, Give me to drink. (For his disciples were gone away unto the city to buy meat.) Then saith the woman of Samaria unto him, How is it that thou, being a Jew, askest drink of me, which am a woman of Samaria? for the Jews have no dealings with the Samaritans. Jesus answered and said unto her, If thou knewest the gift of God, and who it is that saith to thee, Give me to drink; thou wouldest have asked of him, and he would have given thee living water. The woman saith unto him, Sir, thou hast nothing to draw with, and the well is deep: from whence then hast thou that living water? Art thou greater than

our father Jacob, which gave us the well, and drank thereof himself, and his children, and his cattle? Jesus answered and said unto her, Whosoever drinketh of this water shall thirst again: But whosoever drinketh of the water that I shall give him shall never thirst; but the water that I shall give him shall be in him a well of water springing up into everlasting life. The woman saith unto him, Sir, give me this water, that I thirst not, neither come hither to draw. Jesus saith unto her, Go, call thy husband, and come hither. The woman answered and said, I have no husband. Jesus said unto her, Thou hast well said, I have no husband: For thou hast had five husbands; and he whom thou now hast is not thy husband: in that saidst thou truly. The woman saith unto him, Sir, I perceive that thou art a prophet. Our fathers worshipped in this mountain; and ye say, that in Jerusalem is the place where men ought to worship. Jesus saith unto her, Woman, believe me, the hour cometh, when ye shall neither in this mountain, nor yet at Jerusalem, worship the Father. Ye worship ye know not what: we know what we worship: for salvation is of the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is, when the true worshippers shall worship the Father in spirit and in truth: for the Father seeketh such to worship him. God is a Spirit: and they that worship him must worship him in spirit and in truth. The woman saith unto him, I know that Messias cometh, which is called Christ: when he is come, he will tell us all things. Jesus saith unto her, I that speak unto thee am he. And upon this came his disciples, and marvelled that he talked with the woman: yet no man said, What seekest thou? or, Why talkest thou with her? The woman then left her waterpot, and went her way into the city, and saith to the men, Come, see a

man, which told me all things that ever I did: is not this the Christ? (John 4:1-29)

Can you hear how close the experience that I had, sounds a lot like this area of this chapter in the Bible? Now the words did not match verbatim, but know that this was this scripture being fulfilled. In our conversation, I told her the same thing but until I got off on my own, I kept saying it was John five. That was the very first time that I had ever had almost like a little voice inside my mind repeating the number five. When you truly listen to how things went, it almost sounds as if it all happened backwards.

Now I do know that she said she was going home and would be sharing this information and books with the pastor that she had lived with. They are not living together anymore, however are still close friends as she put it. I do not know if her life changed after this, nor do I know if she truly ever read the books. No, I didn't have disciples approach me after the matter for it is just the Father and I in this truck and we keep to ourselves. That is how He teaches me His ways. Not by being around several people all the time.

As I told you all in the beginning of this chapter, this happened in real times. And the Father made sure that I was able to get her the fourth book, Jesus Is Here at a different time and location. But as you are getting ready to learn, we are getting ready to see a lot of things that are written in the Bible, be fulfilled.

For The Powers Of Heaven Shall Be Shaken

This chapter is the entire reason I am writing another book. Well, let me rephrase that, the Father is the reason I am writing this book, however He had me doing a video when He showed me what this means. I was making a video called Rapture Warning on my channel with YouTube. THEJENKS1000 is the name of my channel if you're interested in seeing this lesson come to me in real time. This lesson started coming to me at one hour and eleven minutes in the lesson. And I am going to try and put this lesson into words in this chapter because you all need to be able to see how this works as I do.

The making of this lesson was after the war started in Israel. The day of the attack was the day the Father told my conscience to think about what we will be reading about in the book of Luke soon. But He made me think of this. And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh.

To start this out we need to be repeating a couple of things that we have already went over in this book. But we need to keep all of how He taught me this in mind as we come to the realization like I have.

For whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning, that we through patience and comfort of the scriptures might have hope.
(Romans 15:4)

All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness: (2 Timothy 3:16)

Knowing this first, that no prophecy of the scripture is of any private interpretation. For the prophecy came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost. (2 Peter 1:20-21)

When these holy men wrote the scriptures, they did not write of what they witnessed. They were being moved by the Holy Ghost, and their consciences were being told what to write. They were being told this by our Father so that we could learn from them. So, when we listen to the King James Version of the Bible, we are actually hearing the words of God the Father. Now with keeping that in mind, let us listen to how we are told that their conversations are in heaven. For our conversation is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: (Philippians 3:20)

We have gone over how we find Jesus for the first time in the scriptures of the Old Testament. So, I want to just focus on the first part of the verse: For our conversation is in heaven. Now I am going to post a few verses that are in the book of Luke.

And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon

PRECEPT SEVEN

the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. (Luke 21:20-26)

We are going to start by looking at the last part of the last verse of what we just posted. For the powers of heaven shall be shaken. Then think of how we are told our conversations are in heaven. Then think of how we are told for these be the days of vengeance, that all things written may be fulfilled. Then read this paragraph again and again, until you start hearing that the scriptures are the heavens that are getting ready to shake so that the things that are written within them maybe fulfilled. So, what we are hearing is that a lot of things in the Old testament and the New Testament, have not been done yet. And that is why we are told that men's hearts will be failing them for fear of things coming on the earth. It is not things coming from the heavens above us.

Obviously, there is no way that we can show everything that is going to be happening, but we are going to try to paint a picture as to how we can look at all of this from a spiritual perspective. The first thing I want to bring attention is to how we can hear that there are many that have put there trust into Bibles that were published after the King James was published.

Woe to the rebellious children, saith the Lord, that take counsel, but not of me; and that cover with a covering, but not of my spirit, that they may add sin to sin: That walk to go down into Egypt, and have not asked at my mouth; to strengthen themselves in the strength of Pharaoh, and to trust in the shadow of Egypt! Therefore shall the strength of Pharaoh be your shame, and the trust in the shadow of Egypt your confusion. For his princes were at Zoan, and his ambassadors came to Hanes. They were all ashamed of

a people that could not profit them, nor be an help nor profit, but a shame, and also a reproach. The burden of the beasts of the south: into the land of trouble and anguish, from whence come the young and old lion, the viper and fiery flying serpent, they will carry their riches upon the shoulders of young asses, and their treasures upon the bunches of camels, to a people that shall not profit them. For the Egyptians shall help in vain, and to no purpose: therefore have I cried concerning this, Their strength is to sit still. Now go, write it before them in a table, and note it in a book, that it may be for the time to come for ever and ever: That this is a rebellious people, lying children, children that will not hear the law of the Lord: Which say to the seers, See not; and to the prophets, Prophecy not unto us right things, speak unto us smooth things, prophesy deceits: Get you out of the way, turn aside out of the path, cause the Holy One of Israel to cease from before us. Wherefore thus saith the Holy One of Israel, Because ye despise this word, and trust in oppression and perverseness, and stay thereon: Therefore this iniquity shall be to you as a breach ready to fall, swelling out in a high wall, whose breaking cometh suddenly at an instant. (Jeremiah 30:1-13)

Remember how we were showing those that have dominion over us in Jerusalem above in the last chapter? When the people got to the point that they did not to hear what is being said in the King James Bible, they from above heard what the people wanted. They then in return, told the consciences of some to write a different Bible that made it easier to understand. Or to make the Bible say what they wanted it to say. This is how Jerusalem kills the prophets.

PRECEPT SEVEN

O Jerusalem, Jerusalem, thou that killest the prophets, and stonest them which are sent unto thee, how often would I have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under her wings, and ye would not! (Matthew 23:37)

Then this shows how people have said to the prophets that they do not want them to prophesy. When a person does not want to read or listen to the Old Testament, they are shutting the prophets up. Now I have been asking the Father where I could show this because I have heard so many people say that there are no more prophets. If you have ever heard the word Bible, the prophets have been sent to you. Then it is your choice as to whether you listen to the prophets or not. That is why we hear that all that come to me will learn of the Father written in the prophets.

No man can come to me, except the Father which hath sent me draw him: and I will raise him up at the last day. It is written in the prophets, And they shall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father, cometh unto me. (John 6:44-45)

Everybody has been looking at the Bible as a book of the past. Nobody has been able to comprehend the power of our Father. That is why we have been told that even though a person is dead, their spirit still talks.

By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was righteous, God testifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead yet speaketh. (Hebrews 11:4)

Now for the people that think that things are sealed until the end. These are the people that walk around thinking that they do not need to do anything because they have heard from God directly.

Woe to Ariel, to Ariel, the city where David dwelt! add ye year to year; let them kill sacrifices. Yet I will distress Ariel, and there shall be heaviness and sorrow: and it shall be unto me as Ariel. And I will camp against thee round about, and will lay siege against thee with a mount, and I will raise forts against thee. And thou shalt be brought down, and shalt speak out of the ground, and thy speech shall be low out of the dust, and thy voice shall be, as of one that hath a familiar spirit, out of the ground, and thy speech shall whisper out of the dust. Moreover the multitude of thy strangers shall be like small dust, and the multitude of the terrible ones shall be as chaff that passeth away: yea, it shall be at an instant suddenly. Thou shalt be visited of the Lord of hosts with thunder, and with earthquake, and great noise, with storm and tempest, and the flame of devouring fire. And the multitude of all the nations that fight against Ariel, even all that fight against her and her munition, and that distress her, shall be as a dream of a night vision. It shall even be as when an hungry man dreameth, and, behold, he eateth; but he awaketh, and his soul is empty: or as when a thirsty man dreameth, and, behold, he drinketh; but he awaketh, and, behold, he is faint, and his soul hath appetite: so shall the multitude of all the nations be, that fight against mount Zion. Stay yourselves, and wonder; cry ye out, and cry: they are drunken, but not with wine; they stagger, but not with strong drink. For the Lord hath poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and hath closed your eyes: the prophets and your rulers, the seers hath he covered.

And the vision of all is become unto you as the words of a book that is sealed, which men deliver to one that is learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I cannot; for it is sealed: And the book is delivered to him that is not learned, saying, Read this, I pray thee: and he saith, I am not learned. Wherefore the Lord said, Forasmuch as this people draw near me with their mouth, and with their lips do honour me, but have removed their heart far from me, and their fear toward me is taught by the precept of men: Therefore, behold, I will proceed to do a marvellous work among this people, even a marvellous work and a wonder: for the wisdom of their wise men shall perish, and the understanding of their prudent men shall be hid. Woe unto them that seek deep to hide their counsel from the Lord, and their works are in the dark, and they say, Who seeth us? and who knoweth us? Surely your turning of things upside down shall be esteemed as the potter's clay: for shall the work say of him that made it, He made me not? or shall the thing framed say of him that framed it, He had no understanding? Is it not yet a very little while, and Lebanon shall be turned into a fruitful field, and the fruitful field shall be esteemed as a forest? And in that day shall the deaf hear the words of the book, and the eyes of the blind shall see out of obscurity, and out of darkness. The meek also shall increase their joy in the Lord, and the poor among men shall rejoice in the Holy One of Israel. (Isaiah 29:1-19)

This is kind of the same thing; people have sealed the King James Version of the Bible by seeking out the truth of our Father by other means. Everything we need to know is in the King James Bible and nowhere else. That is why we are told that there is nothing hidden that will not be revealed.

For nothing is secret, that shall not be made manifest; neither any thing hid, that shall not be known and come abroad. (Luke 8:17)

This is when people will realize that they need to take the veil off of their hearts and start to read and listen to the Old Testament.

Seeing then that we have such hope, we use great plainness of speech: And not as Moses, which put a veil over his face, that the children of Israel could not stedfastly look to the end of that which is abolished: But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the same veil untaken away in the reading of the old testament; which veil is done away in Christ. (2 Corinthians 3:12-14)

When this veil is removed, people will start hearing the prophets that have been sent to us all.

From the thirteenth year of Josiah the son of Amon king of Judah, even unto this day, that is the three and twentieth year, the word of the Lord hath come unto me, and I have spoken unto you, rising early and speaking; but ye have not hearkened. And the Lord hath sent unto you all his servants the prophets, rising early and sending them; but ye have not hearkened, nor inclined your ear to hear. They said, Turn ye again now every one from his evil way, and from the evil of your doings, and dwell in the land that the Lord hath given unto you and to your fathers for ever and ever: And go not after other gods to serve them, and to worship them, and provoke me not to anger with the works of your hands; and I will do you no hurt. Yet ye have not hearkened unto me, saith the Lord; that

ye might provoke me to anger with the works of your hands to your own hurt. (Jeremiah 25:3-7)

In the beginning of the reign of Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah came this word from the Lord, saying, Thus saith the Lord; Stand in the court of the Lord's house, and speak unto all the cities of Judah, which come to worship in the Lord's house, all the words that I command thee to speak unto them; diminish not a word: If so be they will hearken, and turn every man from his evil way, that I may repent me of the evil, which I purpose to do unto them because of the evil of their doings. And thou shalt say unto them, Thus saith the Lord; If ye will not hearken to me, to walk in my law, which I have set before you, To hearken to the words of my servants the prophets, whom I sent unto you, both rising up early, and sending them, but ye have not hearkened; Then will I make this house like Shiloh, and will make this city a curse to all the nations of the earth. (Jeremiah 26:1-6)

The words of Jonadab the son of Rechab, that he commanded his sons not to drink wine, are performed; for unto this day they drink none, but obey their father's commandment: notwithstanding I have spoken unto you, rising early and speaking; but ye hearkened not unto me. I have sent also unto you all my servants the prophets, rising up early and sending them, saying, Return ye now every man from his evil way, and amend your doings, and go not after other gods to serve them, and ye shall dwell in the land which I have given to you and to your fathers: but ye have not inclined your ear, nor hearkened unto me. Because the sons of Jonadab the son of Rechab

have performed the commandment of their father, which he commanded them; but this people hath not hearkened unto me: Therefore thus saith the Lord God of hosts, the God of Israel; Behold, I will bring upon Judah and upon all the inhabitants of Jerusalem all the evil that I have pronounced against them: because I have spoken unto them, but they have not heard; and I have called unto them, but they have not answered. (Jeremiah 35:14-17)

Then once people start to realize that Moses and the prophets have been sent to all of us, and they take the vail from their heart, they will start to build their house of God. We have been showing you all that each individual person is their own house of God.

Woe be unto the pastors that destroy and scatter the sheep of my pasture! saith the Lord. Therefore thus saith the Lord God of Israel against the pastors that feed my people; Ye have scattered my flock, and driven them away, and have not visited them: behold, I will visit upon you the evil of your doings, saith the Lord. And I will gather the remnant of my flock out of all countries whither I have driven them, and will bring them again to their folds; and they shall be fruitful and increase. And I will set up shepherds over them which shall feed them: and they shall fear no more, nor be dismayed, neither shall they be lacking, saith the Lord. Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will raise unto David a righteous Branch, and a King shall reign and prosper, and shall execute judgment and justice in the earth. In his days Judah shall be saved, and Israel shall dwell safely: and this is his name whereby he shall be called, The Lord Our Righteousness. Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that they shall no more

say, The Lord liveth, which brought up the children of Israel out of the land of Egypt; But, The Lord liveth, which brought up and which led the seed of the house of Israel out of the north country, and from all countries whither I had driven them; and they shall dwell in their own land. Mine heart within me is broken because of the prophets; all my bones shake; I am like a drunken man, and like a man whom wine hath overcome, because of the Lord, and because of the words of his holiness. For the land is full of adulterers; for because of swearing the land mourneth; the pleasant places of the wilderness are dried up, and their course is evil, and their force is not right. For both prophet and priest are profane; yea, in my house have I found their wickedness, saith the Lord. Wherefore their way shall be unto them as slippery ways in the darkness: they shall be driven on, and fall therein: for I will bring evil upon them, even the year of their visitation, saith the Lord. And I have seen folly in the prophets of Samaria; they prophesied in Baal, and caused my people Israel to err. I have seen also in the prophets of Jerusalem an horrible thing: they commit adultery, and walk in lies: they strengthen also the hands of evildoers, that none doth return from his wickedness; they are all of them unto me as Sodom, and the inhabitants thereof as Gomorrah. Therefore thus saith the Lord of hosts concerning the prophets; Behold, I will feed them with wormwood, and make them drink the water of gall: for from the prophets of Jerusalem is profaneness gone forth into all the land. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, Hearken not unto the words of the prophets that prophesy unto you: they make you vain: they speak a vision of their own heart, and not out of the mouth of the Lord. They say still unto them that despise me, The Lord

hath said, Ye shall have peace; and they say unto every one that walketh after the imagination of his own heart, No evil shall come upon you. For who hath stood in the counsel of the Lord, and hath perceived and heard his word? who hath marked his word, and heard it? Behold, a whirlwind of the Lord is gone forth in fury, even a grievous whirlwind: it shall fall grievously upon the head of the wicked. The anger of the Lord shall not return, until he have executed, and till he have performed the thoughts of his heart: in the latter days ye shall consider it perfectly. I have not sent these prophets, yet they ran: I have not spoken to them, yet they prophesied. But if they had stood in my counsel, and had caused my people to hear my words, then they should have turned them from their evil way, and from the evil of their doings. Am I a God at hand, saith the Lord, and not a God afar off? Can any hide himself in secret places that I shall not see him? saith the Lord. Do not I fill heaven and earth? saith the Lord. I have heard what the prophets said, that prophesy lies in my name, saying, I have dreamed, I have dreamed. How long shall this be in the heart of the prophets that prophesy lies? yea, they are prophets of the deceit of their own heart; Which think to cause my people to forget my name by their dreams which they tell every man to his neighbour, as their fathers have forgotten my name for Baal. The prophet that hath a dream, let him tell a dream; and he that hath my word, let him speak my word faithfully. What is the chaff to the wheat? saith the Lord. Is not my word like as a fire? saith the Lord; and like a hammer that breaketh the rock in pieces? Therefore, behold, I am against the prophets, saith the Lord, that steal my words every one from his neighbour. Behold, I am against the prophets, saith the Lord, that use their

tongues, and say, He saith. Behold, I am against them that prophesy false dreams, saith the Lord, and do tell them, and cause my people to err by their lies, and by their lightness; yet I sent them not, nor commanded them: therefore they shall not profit this people at all, saith the Lord. And when this people, or the prophet, or a priest, shall ask thee, saying, What is the burden of the Lord? thou shalt then say unto them, What burden? I will even forsake you, saith the Lord. And as for the prophet, and the priest, and the people, that shall say, The burden of the Lord, I will even punish that man and his house. Thus shall ye say every one to his neighbour, and every one to his brother, What hath the Lord answered? and, What hath the Lord spoken? And the burden of the Lord shall ye mention no more: for every man's word shall be his burden; for ye have perverted the words of the living God, of the Lord of hosts our God. Thus shalt thou say to the prophet, What hath the Lord answered thee? and, What hath the Lord spoken? But since ye say, The burden of the Lord; therefore thus saith the Lord; Because ye say this word, The burden of the Lord, and I have sent unto you, saying, Ye shall not say, The burden of the Lord; Therefore, behold, I, even I, will utterly forget you, and I will forsake you, and the city that I gave you and your fathers, and cast you out of my presence: And I will bring an everlasting reproach upon you, and a perpetual shame, which shall not be forgotten. (Jeremiah 23:1-40)

Now listen to how God has been talking about the house of God.

The word that came to Jeremiah from the Lord, saying, Stand in the gate of the Lord's house, and proclaim there this word, and say, Hear the word of

the Lord, all ye of Judah, that enter in at these gates to worship the Lord. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, Amend your ways and your doings, and I will cause you to dwell in this place. Trust ye not in lying words, saying, The temple of the Lord, The temple of the Lord, The temple of the Lord, are these. For if ye thoroughly amend your ways and your doings; if ye thoroughly execute judgment between a man and his neighbour; If ye oppress not the stranger, the fatherless, and the widow, and shed not innocent blood in this place, neither walk after other gods to your hurt. Then will I cause you to dwell in this place, in the land that I gave to your fathers, for ever and ever. Behold, ye trust in lying words, that cannot profit. Will ye steal, murder, and commit adultery, and swear falsely, and burn incense unto Baal, and walk after other gods whom ye know not; And come and stand before me in this house, which is called by my name, and say, We are delivered to do all these abominations? Is this house, which is called by my name, become a den of robbers in your eyes? Behold, even I have seen it, saith the Lord. But go ye now unto my place which was in Shiloh, where I set my name at the first, and see what I did to it for the wickedness of my people Israel. And now, because ye have done all these works, saith the Lord, and I spake unto you, rising up early and speaking, but ye heard not; and I called you, but ye answered not; Therefore will I do unto this house, which is called by my name, wherein ye trust, and unto the place which I gave to you and to your fathers, as I have done to Shiloh. And I will cast you out of my sight, as I have cast out all your brethren, even the whole seed of Ephraim. Therefore pray not thou for this people, neither lift up cry nor prayer for them, neither make intercession to me: for

I will not hear thee. Seest thou not what they do in the cities of Judah and in the streets of Jerusalem? The children gather wood, and the fathers kindle the fire, and the women knead their dough, to make cakes to the queen of heaven, and to pour out drink offerings unto other gods, that they may provoke me to anger. Do they provoke me to anger? saith the Lord: do they not provoke themselves to the confusion of their own faces? Therefore thus saith the Lord God; Behold, mine anger and my fury shall be poured out upon this place, upon man, and upon beast, and upon the trees of the field, and upon the fruit of the ground; and it shall burn, and shall not be quenched. Thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; Put your burnt offerings unto your sacrifices, and eat flesh. For I spake not unto your fathers, nor commanded them in the day that I brought them out of the land of Egypt, concerning burnt offerings or sacrifices: But this thing commanded I them, saying, Obey my voice, and I will be your God, and ye shall be my people: and walk ye in all the ways that I have commanded you, that it may be well unto you. But they hearkened not, nor inclined their ear, but walked in the counsels and in the imagination of their evil heart, and went backward, and not forward. Since the day that your fathers came forth out of the land of Egypt unto this day I have even sent unto you all my servants the prophets, daily rising up early and sending them: Yet they hearkened not unto me, nor inclined their ear, but hardened their neck: they did worse than their fathers. Therefore thou shalt speak all these words unto them; but they will not hearken to thee: thou shalt also call unto them; but they will not answer thee. But thou shalt say unto them, This is a nation that obeyeth not the voice of the Lord their God, nor

receiveth correction: truth is perished, and is cut off from their mouth. Cut off thine hair, O Jerusalem, and cast it away, and take up a lamentation on high places; for the Lord hath rejected and forsaken the generation of his wrath. For the children of Judah have done evil in my sight, saith the Lord: they have set their abominations in the house which is called by my name, to pollute it. And they have built the high places of Tophet, which is in the valley of the son of Hinnom, to burn their sons and their daughters in the fire; which I commanded them not, neither came it into my heart. Therefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that it shall no more be called Tophet, nor the valley of the son of Hinnom, but the valley of slaughter: for they shall bury in Tophet, till there be no place. And the carcases of this people shall be meat for the fowls of the heaven, and for the beasts of the earth; and none shall fray them away. Then will I cause to cease from the cities of Judah, and from the streets of Jerusalem, the voice of mirth, and the voice of gladness, the voice of the bridegroom, and the voice of the bride: for the land shall be desolate. (Jeremiah 7:1-34)

Beings how we just read how the Father said in the latter days, we need to listen to a few more times in the Olt Testament that we can hear in the latter days. This is something that has always caught my attention, but because of what is getting ready to happen, I think these words will be drawing a lot more attention.

And now, behold, I go unto my people: come therefore, and I will advertise thee what this people shall do to thy people in the latter days. (Numbers 24:14)

PRECEPT SEVEN

When thou art in tribulation, and all these things are come upon thee, even in the latter days, if thou turn to the Lord thy God, and shalt be obedient unto his voice;(For the Lord thy God is a merciful God;) he will not forsake thee, neither destroy thee, nor forget the covenant of thy fathers which he sware unto them. (Deuteronomy 4:30-31)

For I know that after my death ye will utterly corrupt yourselves, and turn aside from the way which I have commanded you; and evil will befall you in the latter days; because ye will do evil in the sight of the Lord, to provoke him to anger through the work of your hands.(Deuteronomy 31:29)

Then said the Lord unto me, Go yet, love a woman beloved of her friend, yet an adulteress, according to the love of the Lord toward the children of Israel, who look to other gods, and love flagons of wine. So I bought her to me for fifteen pieces of silver, and for an homer of barley, and an half homer of barley: And I said unto her, Thou shalt abide for me many days; thou shalt not play the harlot, and thou shalt not be for another man: so will I also be for thee. For the children of Israel shall abide many days without a king, and without a prince, and without a sacrifice, and without an image, and without an ephod, and without teraphim: Afterward shall the children of Israel return, and seek the Lord their God, and David their king; and shall fear the Lord and his goodness in the latter days.(Hosea 3:1-5)

But there is a God in heaven that revealeth secrets, and maketh known to the king Nebuchadnezzar what

shall be in the latter days. Thy dream, and the visions of thy head upon thy bed, are these; (Daniel 2:28)

That is just a few times we can hear about the latter days in the Old Testament. But if the Old Testament was supposed to be about people from the past, why does it talk about how things will be in the latter days? That last one in Daniel that we showed is a vision that our Father had me break down in I think it was the second book. It has been so long that I cannot remember for sure which book I put it in, but I did break it down.

Now we are going to post those seven verses from Luke again because now we are going to start talking about them directly.

And when ye shall see Jerusalem compassed with armies, then know that the desolation thereof is nigh. Then let them which are in Judaea flee to the mountains; and let them which are in the midst of it depart out; and let not them that are in the countries enter thereinto. For these be the days of vengeance, that all things which are written may be fulfilled. But woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck, in those days! for there shall be great distress in the land, and wrath upon this people. And they shall fall by the edge of the sword, and shall be led away captive into all nations: and Jerusalem shall be trodden down of the Gentiles, until the times of the Gentiles be fulfilled. And there shall be signs in the sun, and in the moon, and in the stars; and upon the earth distress of nations, with perplexity; the sea and the waves roaring; Men's hearts failing them for fear, and for looking after those things which are coming on the earth: for the powers of heaven shall be shaken. (Luke 21:20-26)

We have not seen it yet, but I do believe Jerusalem here on earth will soon be surrounded. That is what caught my attention if the first place. The first thing I want to talk about is how this world is covered in a spiritual flood, and that flood's name is Egypt. We talked about this earlier in this book. It is talked about in the fourth book also.

Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof. Come up, ye horses; and rage, ye chariots; and let the mighty men come forth; the Ethiopians and the Libyans, that handle the shield; and the Lydians, that handle and bend the bow. For this is the day of the Lord God of hosts, a day of vengeance, that he may avenge him of his adversaries: and the sword shall devour, and it shall be satiate and made drunk with their blood: for the Lord God of hosts hath a sacrifice in the north country by the river Euphrates.
(Jeremiah 46:8-10)

I can't help but think that because the earth is covered with this spiritual flood that some of the people that fell in the books of Moses will be happening to this generation because they do not believe in the Old Testament. This one chapter sums up a lot that goes on in those chapters.

Give ear, O my people, to my law: incline your ears to the words of my mouth. I will open my mouth in a parable: I will utter dark sayings of old: Which we have heard and known, and our fathers have told us. We will not hide them from their children, shewing to the generation to come the praises of the Lord, and his strength, and his wonderful works that he hath done. For he established a testimony in Jacob, and appointed a law in Israel, which he commanded

our fathers, that they should make them known to their children: That the generation to come might know them, even the children which should be born; who should arise and declare them to their children: That they might set their hope in God, and not forget the works of God, but keep his commandments. And might not be as their fathers, a stubborn and rebellious generation; a generation that set not their heart aright, and whose spirit was not stedfast with God. The children of Ephraim, being armed, and carrying bows, turned back in the day of battle. They kept not the covenant of God, and refused to walk in his law; And forgat his works, and his wonders that he had shewed them. Marvellous things did he in the sight of their fathers, in the land of Egypt, in the field of Zoan. He divided the sea, and caused them to pass through; and he made the waters to stand as an heap. In the daytime also he led them with a cloud, and all the night with a light of fire. He clave the rocks in the wilderness, and gave them drink as out of the great depths. He brought streams also out of the rock, and caused waters to run down like rivers. And they sinned yet more against him by provoking the most High in the wilderness. And they tempted God in their heart by asking meat for their lust. Yea, they spake against God; they said, Can God furnish a table in the wilderness? Behold, he smote the rock, that the waters gushed out, and the streams overflowed; can he give bread also? can he provide flesh for his people? Therefore the Lord heard this, and was wroth: so a fire was kindled against Jacob, and anger also came up against Israel; Because they believed not in God, and trusted not in his salvation: Though he had commanded the clouds from above, and opened the doors of heaven, And had rained

down manna upon them to eat, and had given them of the corn of heaven. Man did eat angels' food: he sent them meat to the full. He caused an east wind to blow in the heaven: and by his power he brought in the south wind. He rained flesh also upon them as dust, and feathered fowls like as the sand of the sea: And he let it fall in the midst of their camp, round about their habitations. So they did eat, and were well filled: for he gave them their own desire; They were not estranged from their lust. But while their meat was yet in their mouths, The wrath of God came upon them, and slew the fattest of them, and smote down the chosen men of Israel. For all this they sinned still, and believed not for his wondrous works. Therefore their days did he consume in vanity, and their years in trouble. When he slew them, then they sought him: and they returned and enquired early after God. And they remembered that God was their rock, and the high God their redeemer. Nevertheless they did flatter him with their mouth, and they lied unto him with their tongues. For their heart was not right with him, neither were they stedfast in his covenant. But he, being full of compassion, forgave their iniquity, and destroyed them not: yea, many a time turned he his anger away, and did not stir up all his wrath. For he remembered that they were but flesh; a wind that passeth away, and cometh not again. How oft did they provoke him in the wilderness, and grieve him in the desert! Yea, they turned back and tempted God, and limited the Holy One of Israel. They remembered not his hand, nor the day when he delivered them from the enemy. How he had wrought his signs in Egypt, and his wonders in the field of Zoan. And had turned their rivers into blood; and their floods, that they could not drink. He sent divers sorts of flies among them,

which devoured them; and frogs, which destroyed them. He gave also their increase unto the caterpillar, and their labour unto the locust. He destroyed their vines with hail, and their sycamore trees with frost. He gave up their cattle also to the hail, and their flocks to hot thunderbolts. He cast upon them the fierceness of his anger, wrath, and indignation, and trouble, by sending evil angels among them. He made a way to his anger; he spared not their soul from death, but gave their life over to the pestilence; And smote all the firstborn in Egypt; the chief of their strength in the tabernacles of Ham: But made his own people to go forth like sheep, and guided them in the wilderness like a flock. And he led them on safely, so that they feared not: but the sea overwhelmed their enemies. And he brought them to the border of his sanctuary, even to this mountain, which his right hand had purchased. He cast out the heathen also before them, and divided them an inheritance by line, and made the tribes of Israel to dwell in their tents. Yet they tempted and provoked the most high God, and kept not his testimonies: But turned back, and dealt unfaithfully like their fathers: they were turned aside like a deceitful bow. For they provoked him to anger with their high places, and moved him to jealousy with their graven images. When God heard this, he was wroth, and greatly abhorred Israel: So that he forsook the tabernacle of Shiloh, the tent which he placed among men; And delivered his strength into captivity, and his glory into the enemy's hand. He gave his people over also unto the sword; and was wroth with his inheritance. The fire consumed their young men; and their maidens were not given to marriage. Their priests fell by the sword; and their widows made no lamentation. Then the Lord awaked as one out of

sleep, and like a mighty man that shouteth by reason of wine. And he smote his enemies in the hinder parts: he put them to a perpetual reproach. Moreover he refused the tabernacle of Joseph, and chose not the tribe of Ephraim: But chose the tribe of Judah, the mount Zion which he loved. And he built his sanctuary like high palaces, like the earth which he hath established for ever. He chose David also his servant, and took him from the sheepfolds: From following the ewes great with young he brought him to feed Jacob his people, and Israel his inheritance. So he fed them according to the integrity of his heart; and guided them by the skilfulness of his hands. (Psalm 78:1-72)

I want to post one more chapter that I feel is talking about what will happen to those that refuse to hear Moses.

The word that came to Jeremiah from the Lord saying, Hear ye the words of this covenant, and speak unto the men of Judah, and to the inhabitants of Jerusalem; And say thou unto them, Thus saith the Lord God of Israel; Cursed be the man that obeyeth not the words of this covenant, Which I commanded your fathers in the day that I brought them forth out of the land of Egypt, from the iron furnace, saying, Obey my voice, and do them, according to all which I command you: so shall ye be my people, and I will be your God: That I may perform the oath which I have sworn unto your fathers, to give them a land flowing with milk and honey, as it is this day. Then answered I, and said, So be it, O Lord. Then the Lord said unto me, Proclaim all these words in the cities of Judah, and in the streets of Jerusalem, saying, Hear ye the words of this covenant, and do them. For I earnestly protested

unto your fathers in the day that I brought them up out of the land of Egypt, even unto this day, rising early and protesting, saying, Obey my voice. Yet they obeyed not, nor inclined their ear, but walked every one in the imagination of their evil heart: therefore I will bring upon them all the words of this covenant, which I commanded them to do: but they did them not. And the Lord said unto me, A conspiracy is found among the men of Judah, and among the inhabitants of Jerusalem. They are turned back to the iniquities of their forefathers, which refused to hear my words; and they went after other gods to serve them: the house of Israel and the house of Judah have broken my covenant which I made with their fathers. Therefore thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will bring evil upon them, which they shall not be able to escape; and though they shall cry unto me, I will not hearken unto them. Then shall the cities of Judah and inhabitants of Jerusalem go, and cry unto the gods unto whom they offer incense: but they shall not save them at all in the time of their trouble. For according to the number of thy cities were thy gods, O Judah; and according to the number of the streets of Jerusalem have ye set up altars to that shameful thing, even altars to burn incense unto Baal. Therefore pray not thou for this people, neither lift up a cry or prayer for them: for I will not hear them in the time that they cry unto me for their trouble. What hath my beloved to do in mine house, seeing she hath wrought lewdness with many, and the holy flesh is passed from thee? when thou doest evil, then thou rejoicest. The Lord called thy name, A green olive tree, fair, and of goodly fruit: with the noise of a great tumult he hath kindled fire upon it, and the branches of it are broken. For the Lord of hosts, that planted thee, hath pronounced evil against thee, for the evil of

PRECEPT SEVEN

the house of Israel and of the house of Judah, which they have done against themselves to provoke me to anger in offering incense unto Baal. And the Lord hath given me knowledge of it, and I know it: then thou shewedst me their doings. But I was like a lamb or an ox that is brought to the slaughter; and I knew not that they had devised devices against me, saying, Let us destroy the tree with the fruit thereof, and let us cut him off from the land of the living, that his name may be no more remembered. But, O Lord of hosts, that judgest righteously, that triest the reins and the heart, let me see thy vengeance on them: for unto thee have I revealed my cause. Therefore thus saith the Lord of the men of Anathoth, that seek thy life, saying, Prophecy not in the name of the Lord, that thou die not by our hand: Therefore thus saith the Lord of hosts, Behold, I will punish them: the young men shall die by the sword; their sons and their daughters shall die by famine: And there shall be no remnant of them: for I will bring evil upon the men of Anathoth, even the year of their visitation. (Jeremiah 11:1-23)

What I want to focus on when we are told that these are the days of vengeance. I am going to post a chapter here, but it does not talk about it being the day of vengeance until about a third into the chapter. We need to realize that when this says this be the day of vengeance, it is not just one twenty-four-hour period. This will take some time. Then I will be posting another chapter from Jeremiah that talks about the vengeance of the Lord.

The word of the Lord which came to Jeremiah the prophet against the Gentiles; Against Egypt, against the army of Pharaohnecho king of Egypt, which was by the river Euphrates in Carchemish, which

Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon smote in the fourth year of Jehoiakim the son of Josiah king of Judah. Order ye the buckler and shield, and draw near to battle. Harness the horses; and get up, ye horsemen, and stand forth with your helmets; furbish the spears, and put on the brigandines. Wherefore have I seen them dismayed and turned away back? and their mighty ones are beaten down, and are fled apace, and look not back: for fear was round about, saith the Lord. Let not the swift flee away, nor the mighty man escape; they shall stumble, and fall toward the north by the river Euphrates. Who is this that cometh up as a flood, whose waters are moved as the rivers? Egypt riseth up like a flood, and his waters are moved like the rivers; and he saith, I will go up, and will cover the earth; I will destroy the city and the inhabitants thereof. Come up, ye horses; and rage, ye chariots; and let the mighty men come forth; the Ethiopians and the Libyans, that handle the shield; and the Lydians, that handle and bend the bow. For this is the day of the Lord God of hosts, a day of vengeance, that he may avenge him of his adversaries: and the sword shall devour, and it shall be satiate and made drunk with their blood: for the Lord God of hosts hath a sacrifice in the north country by the river Euphrates. Go up into Gilead, and take balm, O virgin, the daughter of Egypt: in vain shalt thou use many medicines; for thou shalt not be cured. The nations have heard of thy shame, and thy cry hath filled the land: for the mighty man hath stumbled against the mighty, and they are fallen both together. The word that the Lord spake to Jeremiah the prophet, how Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon should come and smite the land of Egypt. Declare ye in Egypt, and publish in Migdol, and publish in Noph and in Tahpanhes: say ye,

Stand fast, and prepare thee; for the sword shall devour round about thee. Why are thy valiant men swept away? they stood not, because the Lord did drive them. He made many to fall, yea, one fell upon another: and they said, Arise, and let us go again to our own people, and to the land of our nativity, from the oppressing sword. They did cry there, Pharaoh king of Egypt is but a noise; he hath passed the time appointed. As I live, saith the King, whose name is the Lord of hosts, Surely as Tabor is among the mountains, and as Carmel by the sea, so shall he come. O thou daughter dwelling in Egypt, furnish thyself to go into captivity: for Noph shall be waste and desolate without an inhabitant. Egypt is like a very fair heifer, but destruction cometh; it cometh out of the north. Also her hired men are in the midst of her like fatted bullocks; for they also are turned back, and are fled away together: they did not stand, because the day of their calamity was come upon them, and the time of their visitation. The voice thereof shall go like a serpent; for they shall march with an army, and come against her with axes, as hewers of wood. They shall cut down her forest, saith the Lord, though it cannot be searched; because they are more than the grasshoppers, and are innumerable. The daughter of Egypt shall be confounded; she shall be delivered into the hand of the people of the north. The Lord of hosts, the God of Israel, saith; Behold, I will punish the multitude of No, and Pharaoh, and Egypt, with their gods, and their kings; even Pharaoh, and all them that trust in him: And I will deliver them into the hand of those that seek their lives, and into the hand of Nebuchadrezzar king of Babylon, and into the hand of his servants: and afterward it shall be inhabited, as in the days of old, saith the Lord. But fear not thou,

O my servant Jacob, and be not dismayed, O Israel: for, behold, I will save thee from afar off, and thy seed from the land of their captivity; and Jacob shall return, and be in rest and at ease, and none shall make him afraid. Fear thou not, O Jacob my servant, saith the Lord: for I am with thee; for I will make a full end of all the nations whither I have driven thee: but I will not make a full end of thee, but correct thee in measure; yet will I not leave thee wholly unpunished. (Jeremiah 46:1-28)

Thus saith the Lord; Behold, I will raise up against Babylon, and against them that dwell in the midst of them that rise up against me, a destroying wind; And will send unto Babylon fanners, that shall fan her, and shall empty her land: for in the day of trouble they shall be against her round about. Against him that bendeth let the archer bend his bow, and against him that lifteth himself up in his brigandine: and spare ye not her young men; destroy ye utterly all her host. Thus the slain shall fall in the land of the Chaldeans, and they that are thrust through in her streets. For Israel hath not been forsaken, nor Judah of his God, of the Lord of hosts; though their land was filled with sin against the Holy One of Israel. Flee out of the midst of Babylon, and deliver every man his soul: be not cut off in her iniquity; for this is the time of the Lord's vengeance; he will render unto her a recompence. Babylon hath been a golden cup in the Lord's hand, that made all the earth drunken: the nations have drunken of her wine; therefore the nations are mad. Babylon is suddenly fallen and destroyed: howl for her; take balm for her pain, if so be she may be healed. We would have healed Babylon, but she is not healed: forsake her, and let us go every

one into his own country: for her judgment reacheth unto heaven, and is lifted up even to the skies. The Lord hath brought forth our righteousness: come, and let us declare in Zion the work of the Lord our God. Make bright the arrows; gather the shields: the Lord hath raised up the spirit of the kings of the Medes: for his device is against Babylon, to destroy it; because it is the vengeance of the Lord, the vengeance of his temple. Set up the standard upon the walls of Babylon, make the watch strong, set up the watchmen, prepare the ambushes: for the Lord hath both devised and done that which he spake against the inhabitants of Babylon. O thou that dwellest upon many waters, abundant in treasures, thine end is come, and the measure of thy covetousness. The Lord of hosts hath sworn by himself, saying, Surely I will fill thee with men, as with caterpillers; and they shall lift up a shout against thee. He hath made the earth by his power, he hath established the world by his wisdom, and hath stretched out the heaven by his understanding. When he uttereth his voice, there is a multitude of waters in the heavens; and he causeth the vapours to ascend from the ends of the earth: he maketh lightnings with rain, and bringeth forth the wind out of his treasures. Every man is brutish by his knowledge; every founder is confounded by the graven image: for his molten image is falsehood, and there is no breath in them. They are vanity, the work of errors: in the time of their visitation they shall perish. The portion of Jacob is not like them; for he is the former of all things: and Israel is the rod of his inheritance: the Lord of hosts is his name. Thou art my battle axe and weapons of war: for with thee will I break in pieces the nations, and with thee will I destroy kingdoms; And with thee will I break in pieces the horse and his rider; and with thee

will I break in pieces the chariot and his rider; With thee also will I break in pieces man and woman; and with thee will I break in pieces old and young; and with thee will I break in pieces the young man and the maid; I will also break in pieces with thee the shepherd and his flock; and with thee will I break in pieces the husbandman and his yoke of oxen; and with thee will I break in pieces captains and rulers. And I will render unto Babylon and to all the inhabitants of Chaldea all their evil that they have done in Zion in your sight, saith the Lord. Behold, I am against thee, O destroying mountain, saith the Lord, which destroyest all the earth: and I will stretch out mine hand upon thee, and roll thee down from the rocks, and will make thee a burnt mountain. And they shall not take of thee a stone for a corner, nor a stone for foundations; but thou shalt be desolate for ever, saith the Lord. Set ye up a standard in the land, blow the trumpet among the nations, prepare the nations against her, call together against her the kingdoms of Ararat, Minni, and Ashchenaz; appoint a captain against her; cause the horses to come up as the rough caterpillers. Prepare against her the nations with the kings of the Medes, the captains thereof, and all the rulers thereof, and all the land of his dominion. And the land shall tremble and sorrow: for every purpose of the Lord shall be performed against Babylon, to make the land of Babylon a desolation without an inhabitant. The mighty men of Babylon have forborn to fight, they have remained in their holds: their might hath failed; they became as women: they have burned her dwellingplaces; her bars are broken. One post shall run to meet another, and one messenger to meet another, to shew the king of Babylon that his city is taken at one end, And that the passages are stopped,

and the reeds they have burned with fire, and the men of war are affrighted. For thus saith the Lord of hosts, the God of Israel; The daughter of Babylon is like a threshingfloor, it is time to thresh her: yet a little while, and the time of her harvest shall come. Nebuchadrezzar the king of Babylon hath devoured me, he hath crushed me, he hath made me an empty vessel, he hath swallowed me up like a dragon, he hath filled his belly with my delicates, he hath cast me out. The violence done to me and to my flesh be upon Babylon, shall the inhabitant of Zion say; and my blood upon the inhabitants of Chaldea, shall Jerusalem say. Therefore thus saith the Lord; Behold, I will plead thy cause, and take vengeance for thee; and I will dry up her sea, and make her springs dry. And Babylon shall become heaps, a dwellingplace for dragons, an astonishment, and an hissing, without an inhabitant. They shall roar together like lions: they shall yell as lions' whelps. In their heat I will make their feasts, and I will make them drunken, that they may rejoice, and sleep a perpetual sleep, and not wake, saith the Lord. I will bring them down like lambs to the slaughter, like rams with he goats. How is Sheshach taken! and how is the praise of the whole earth surprised! how is Babylon become an astonishment among the nations! The sea is come up upon Babylon: she is covered with the multitude of the waves thereof. Her cities are a desolation, a dry land, and a wilderness, a land wherein no man dwelleth, neither doth any son of man pass thereby. And I will punish Bel in Babylon, and I will bring forth out of his mouth that which he hath swallowed up: and the nations shall not flow together any more unto him: yea, the wall of Babylon shall fall. My people, go ye out of the midst of her, and deliver ye every man his soul from the fierce anger

of the Lord. And lest your heart faint, and ye fear for the rumour that shall be heard in the land; a rumour shall both come one year, and after that in another year shall come a rumour, and violence in the land, ruler against ruler. Therefore, behold, the days come, that I will do judgment upon the graven images of Babylon: and her whole land shall be confounded, and all her slain shall fall in the midst of her. Then the heaven and the earth, and all that is therein, shall sing for Babylon: for the spoilers shall come unto her from the north, saith the Lord. As Babylon hath caused the slain of Israel to fall, so at Babylon shall fall the slain of all the earth. Ye that have escaped the sword, go away, stand not still: remember the Lord afar off, and let Jerusalem come into your mind. We are confounded, because we have heard reproach: shame hath covered our faces: for strangers are come into the sanctuaries of the Lord's house. Wherefore, behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will do judgment upon her graven images: and through all her land the wounded shall groan. Though Babylon should mount up to heaven, and though she should fortify the height of her strength, yet from me shall spoilers come unto her, saith the Lord. A sound of a cry cometh from Babylon, and great destruction from the land of the Chaldeans: Because the Lord hath spoiled Babylon, and destroyed out of her the great voice; when her waves do roar like great waters, a noise of their voice is uttered: Because the spoiler is come upon her, even upon Babylon, and her mighty men are taken, every one of their bows is broken: for the Lord God of recompences shall surely requite. And I will make drunk her princes, and her wise men, her captains, and her rulers, and her mighty men: and they shall sleep a perpetual sleep, and not wake, saith the King,

whose name is the Lord of hosts. Thus saith the Lord of hosts; The broad walls of Babylon shall be utterly broken, and her high gates shall be burned with fire; and the people shall labour in vain, and the folk in the fire, and they shall be weary. The word which Jeremiah the prophet commanded Seraiah the son of Neriah, the son of Maaseiah, when he went with Zedekiah the king of Judah into Babylon in the fourth year of his reign. And this Seraiah was a quiet prince. So Jeremiah wrote in a book all the evil that should come upon Babylon, even all these words that are written against Babylon. And Jeremiah said to Seraiah, When thou comest to Babylon, and shalt see, and shalt read all these words; Then shalt thou say, O Lord, thou hast spoken against this place, to cut it off, that none shall remain in it, neither man nor beast, but that it shall be desolate for ever. And it shall be, when thou hast made an end of reading this book, that thou shalt bind a stone to it, and cast it into the midst of Euphrates: And thou shalt say, Thus shall Babylon sink, and shall not rise from the evil that I will bring upon her: and they shall be weary. Thus far are the words of Jeremiah. (Jeremiah 51:1-64)

Notice how Babylon will be falling. Many think that it has already fallen, but remember the scriptures were written for our learning. Now that we have heard a bit about this vengeance, we need to be thinking about how He will be taking some of this vengeance. One of the ways He is going to do this is by pouring out His spirit. Yes, we talked about this earlier but this too, is a way of Him taking vengeance.

And it shall come to pass in the last days, saith God, I will pour out of my Spirit upon all flesh: and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions, and your old men shall dream

dreams: And on my servants and on my handmaidens I will pour out in those days of my Spirit; and they shall prophesy: And I will shew wonders in heaven above, and signs in the earth beneath; blood, and fire, and vapour of smoke: (Acts 2:17-19)

Yes, many will rise when this happens, but many will burst if you will. Let us listen to God tells us that He will make people drunk with His spirit. And this drunkenness will put people against one another.

Then the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Thus saith the Lord, After this manner will I mar the pride of Judah, and the great pride of Jerusalem. This evil people, which refuse to hear my words, which walk in the imagination of their heart, and walk after other gods, to serve them, and to worship them, shall even be as this girdle, which is good for nothing. For as the girdle cleaveth to the loins of a man, so have I caused to cleave unto me the whole house of Israel and the whole house of Judah, saith the Lord; that they might be unto me for a people, and for a name, and for a praise, and for a glory: but they would not hear. Therefore thou shalt speak unto them this word; Thus saith the Lord God of Israel, Every bottle shall be filled with wine: and they shall say unto thee, Do we not certainly know that every bottle shall be filled with wine? Then shalt thou say unto them, Thus saith the Lord, Behold, I will fill all the inhabitants of this land, even the kings that sit upon David's throne, and the priests, and the prophets, and all the inhabitants of Jerusalem, with drunkenness. And I will dash them one against another, even the fathers and the sons together, saith the Lord: I will not pity, nor spare, nor have mercy, but destroy them. (Jeremiah 13:8-14)

PRECEPT SEVEN

We have shown that we are the vessels of God. But in previous books, we have shown that these vessels are also bottles. Then we need to remember how we are told that you can't put new wine into old bottles unless the bottles burst.

And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; else the new wine will burst the bottles, and be spilled, and the bottles shall perish. But new wine must be put into new bottles; and both are preserved. No man also having drunk old wine straightway desireth new: for he saith, The old is better. (Luke 5:37-39)

When our Father pours out His spirit, it will make many ashamed of what they have done with their lives. It will cause people from all nations to turn on one another, because they will feel guilty for not seeking Him with all their heart, soul, and mind. And just as we showed you all in the one conversation that we had, many of the wise and prudent will rebuke Him when He does this. Because their minds are full of garbage that does not line up with the truth.

When all of this starts to happen, people will start to panic. This panic will be global, and will sound like the roaring sea.

Woe to the multitude of many people, which make a noise like the noise of the seas; and to the rushing of nations, that make a rushing like the rushing of mighty waters! The nations shall rush like the rushing of many waters: but God shall rebuke them, and they shall flee far off, and shall be chased as the chaff of the mountains before the wind, and like a rolling thing before the whirlwind. (Isaiah 17:12-13)

When we hear about the seas and waves roaring in that section of Luke that we posted, that is talking about people and not the actual sea.

The sorrows of death compassed me, and the floods of ungodly men made me afraid. (Psalm 18:4)

The floods have lifted up, O Lord, the floods have lifted up their voice; the floods lift up their waves. The Lord on high is mightier than the noise of many waters, yea, than the mighty waves of the sea. (Psalm 93:3-4)

Now I want to talk about how we are told men's hearts will be failing them for fear for looking after the things coming on the earth. I am sure that there will be many men's hearts physically failing them, but I do not think that means just that. Let us listen to when we can hear about other men's hearts failing them, but they do not die.

And as one of them opened his sack to give his ass provender in the inn, he espied his money; for, behold, it was in his sack's mouth. And he said unto his brethren, My money is restored; and, lo, it is even in my sack: and their heart failed them, and they were afraid, saying one to another, What is this that God hath done unto us? (Genesis 42:27-28)

This is the story of Joseph and his brothers. I will not post the entire story for it is a few chapters of the Bible. But I wanted to point out Joseph's brothers hearts failed them, but they did not die. I love this story listening to this story every time I listen to the Bible. When you listen to it, you will notice that Joseph's brothers sold him. But then later in the story, when his brothers find out that Joseph is second in command in Egypt, Joseph tells them that it was God that did all that happened to Joseph.

Now because there is wars and rumors of wars happening now, there is something that I wonder about. I am not going to say with all certainty, but I think there is a nuclear war in our near future. I

say this because we can hear of something that sounds like a nuclear bomb being set off.

Behold, the day of the Lord cometh, and thy spoil shall be divided in the midst of thee. For I will gather all nations against Jerusalem to battle; and the city shall be taken, and the houses rifled, and the women ravished; and half of the city shall go forth into captivity, and the residue of the people shall not be cut off from the city. Then shall the Lord go forth, and fight against those nations, as when he fought in the day of battle. And his feet shall stand in that day upon the mount of Olives, which is before Jerusalem on the east, and the mount of Olives shall cleave in the midst thereof toward the east and toward the west, and there shall be a very great valley; and half of the mountain shall remove toward the north, and half of it toward the south. And ye shall flee to the valley of the mountains; for the valley of the mountains shall reach unto Azal: yea, ye shall flee, like as ye fled from before the earthquake in the days of Uzziah king of Judah: and the Lord my God shall come, and all the saints with thee. And it shall come to pass in that day, that the light shall not be clear, nor dark: But it shall be one day which shall be known to the Lord, not day, nor night: but it shall come to pass, that at evening time it shall be light. And it shall be in that day, that living waters shall go out from Jerusalem; half of them toward the former sea, and half of them toward the hinder sea: in summer and in winter shall it be. And the Lord shall be king over all the earth: in that day shall there be one Lord, and his name one. All the land shall be turned as a plain from Geba to Rimmon south of Jerusalem: and it shall be lifted up, and inhabited in her place,

from Benjamin's gate unto the place of the first gate, unto the corner gate, and from the tower of Hananeel unto the king's winepresses. And men shall dwell in it, and there shall be no more utter destruction; but Jerusalem shall be safely inhabited. And this shall be the plague wherewith the Lord will smite all the people that have fought against Jerusalem; Their flesh shall consume away while they stand upon their feet, and their eyes shall consume away in their holes, and their tongue shall consume away in their mouth. (Zechariah 14:1-12)

Now here is something that I wonder about. We are going to be showing where God said He would send a bunch of people from another country. He even says that we will not understand their language. Now I have not been keeping up on the news since the Father started feeding me with all this newfound knowledge, but I remember seeing some stuff about how the southern border is out of control. Listen to what we are being told here.

Wherefore thus saith the Lord God of hosts, Because ye speak this word, behold, I will make my words in thy mouth fire, and this people wood, and it shall devour them. Lo, I will bring a nation upon you from far, O house of Israel, saith the Lord: it is a mighty nation, it is an ancient nation, a nation whose language thou knowest not, neither understandest what they say. Their quiver is as an open sepulchre, they are all mighty men. And they shall eat up thine harvest, and thy bread, which thy sons and thy daughters should eat: they shall eat up thy flocks and thine herds: they shall eat up thy vines and thy fig trees: they shall impoverish thy fenced cities, wherein thou trustedst, with the sword. Nevertheless in those days, saith the Lord, I will not make a full end with you. And it shall

come to pass, when ye shall say, Wherefore doeth the Lord our God all these things unto us? then shalt thou answer them, Like as ye have forsaken me, and served strange gods in your land, so shall ye serve strangers in a land that is not your's. Declare this in the house of Jacob, and publish it in Judah, saying, Hear now this, O foolish people, and without understanding; which have eyes, and see not; which have ears, and hear not: Fear ye not me? saith the Lord: will ye not tremble at my presence, which have placed the sand for the bound of the sea by a perpetual decree, that it cannot pass it: and though the waves thereof toss themselves, yet can they not prevail; though they roar, yet can they not pass over it? But this people hath a revolting and a rebellious inRheart; they are revolted and gone. Neither say they in their heart, Let us now fear the Lord our God, that giveth rain, both the former and the latter, in his season: he reserveth unto us the appointed weeks of the harvest. Your iniquities have turned away these things, and your sins have withholden good things from you. For among my people are found wicked men: they lay wait, as he that setteth snares; they set a trap, they catch men. As a cage is full of birds, so are their houses full of deceit: therefore they are become great, and waxen rich. They are waxen fat, they shine: yea, they overpass the deeds of the wicked: they judge not the cause, the cause of the fatherless, yet they prosper; and the right of the needy do they not judge. Shall I not visit for these things? saith the Lord: shall not my soul be avenged on such a nation as this? A wonderful and horrible thing is committed in the land; The prophets prophesy falsely, and the priests bear rule by their means; and my people love to have it so: and what will ye do in the end thereof? (Jeremiah 5:14-31)

I know one thing that will happen to many, but many will not know what is happening to them. Hear the word of the Lord, ye children of Israel: for the Lord hath a controversy with the inhabitants of the land, because there is no truth, nor mercy, nor knowledge of God in the land. By swearing, and lying, and killing, and stealing, and committing adultery, they break out, and blood toucheth blood. Therefore shall the land mourn, and every one that dwelleth therein shall languish, with the beasts of the field, and with the fowls of heaven; yea, the fishes of the sea also shall be taken away. Yet let no man strive, nor reprove another: for thy people are as they that strive with the priest. Therefore shalt thou fall in the day, and the prophet also shall fall with thee in the night, and I will destroy thy mother. My people are destroyed for lack of knowledge: because thou hast rejected knowledge, I will also reject thee, that thou shalt be no priest to me: seeing thou hast forgotten the law of thy God, I will also forget thy children. As they were increased, so they sinned against me: therefore will I change their glory into shame. They eat up the sin of my people, and they set their heart on their iniquity. And there shall be, like people, like priest: and I will punish them for their ways, and reward them their doings. For they shall eat, and not have enough: they shall commit whoredom, and shall not increase: because they have left off to take heed to the Lord. Whoredom and wine and new wine take away the heart. My people ask counsel at their stocks, and their staff declareth unto them: for the spirit of whoredoms hath caused them to err, and they have gone a whoring from under their God. They sacrifice upon the tops of the mountains, and burn incense upon the hills, under oaks and poplars and

PRECEPT SEVEN

elms, because the shadow thereof is good: therefore your daughters shall commit whoredom, and your spouses shall commit adultery. I will not punish your daughters when they commit whoredom, nor your spouses when they commit adultery: for themselves are separated with whores, and they sacrifice with harlots: therefore the people that doth not understand shall fall. Though thou, Israel, play the harlot, yet let not Judah offend; and come not ye unto Gilgal, neither go ye up to Bethaven, nor swear, The Lord liveth. For Israel slideth back as a backsliding heifer: now the Lord will feed them as a lamb in a large place. Ephraim is joined to idols: let him alone. Their drink is sour: they have committed whoredom continually: her rulers with shame do love, Give ye. The wind hath bound her up in her wings, and they shall be ashamed because of their sacrifices. (Hosea 4:1-19)

Now let us listen to when we can hear the scriptures talk about how Gaza will be destroyed. I do believe that this is the heavens being shaken.

The words of Amos, who was among the herdmen of Tekoa, which he saw concerning Israel in the days of Uzziah king of Judah, and in the days of Jeroboam the son of Joash king of Israel, two years before the earthquake. And he said, The Lord will roar from Zion, and utter his voice from Jerusalem; and the habitations of the shepherds shall mourn, and the top of Carmel shall wither. Thus saith the Lord; For three transgressions of Damascus, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof; because they have threshed Gilead with threshing instruments of iron: But I will send a fire into the house of Hazael, which shall devour the palaces of

Benhadad. I will break also the bar of Damascus, and cut off the inhabitant from the plain of Aven, and him that holdeth the sceptre from the house of Eden: and the people of Syria shall go into captivity unto Kir, saith the Lord. Thus saith the Lord; For three transgressions of Gaza, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof; because they carried away captive the whole captivity, to deliver them up to Edom: But I will send a fire on the wall of Gaza, which shall devour the palaces thereof: And I will cut off the inhabitant from Ashdod, and him that holdeth the sceptre from Ashkelon, and I will turn mine hand against Ekron: and the remnant of the Philistines shall perish, saith the Lord God. Thus saith the Lord; For three transgressions of Tyrus, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof; because they delivered up the whole captivity to Edom, and remembered not the brotherly covenant: But I will send a fire on the wall of Tyrus, which shall devour the palaces thereof. Thus saith the Lord; For three transgressions of Edom, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof; because he did pursue his brother with the sword, and did cast off all pity, and his anger did tear perpetually, and he kept his wrath for ever: But I will send a fire upon Teman, which shall devour the palaces of Bozrah. Thus saith the Lord; For three transgressions of the children of Ammon, and for four, I will not turn away the punishment thereof; because they have ripped up the women with child of Gilead, that they might enlarge their border: But I will kindle a fire in the wall of Rabbah, and it shall devour the palaces thereof, with shouting in the day of battle, with a tempest in the day of the whirlwind: And their king shall go into

PRECEPT SEVEN

captivity, he and his princes together, saith the Lord.
(Amos 1:115)

Then we need to pay attention to a couple spots in Isaiah that draw attention to those that eat swine's flesh.

I am sought of them that asked not for me; I am found of them that sought me not: I said, Behold me, behold me, unto a nation that was not called by my name. I have spread out my hands all the day unto a rebellious people, which walketh in a way that was not good, after their own thoughts; A people that provoketh me to anger continually to my face; that sacrificeth in gardens, and burneth incense upon altars of brick; Which remain among the graves, and lodge in the monuments, which eat swine's flesh, and broth of abominable things is in their vessels; Which say, Stand by thyself, come not near to me; for I am holier than thou. These are a smoke in my nose, a fire that burneth all the day. Behold, it is written before me: I will not keep silence, but will recompense, even recompense into their bosom, Your iniquities, and the iniquities of your fathers together, saith the Lord, which have burned incense upon the mountains, and blasphemed me upon the hills: therefore will I measure their former work into their bosom. (Isaiah 65:1-7)

For, behold, the Lord will come with fire, and with his chariots like a whirlwind, to render his anger with fury, and his rebuke with flames of fire. For by fire and by his sword will the Lord plead with all flesh: and the slain of the Lord shall be many. They that sanctify themselves, and purify themselves in the gardens behind one tree in the midst, eating swine's flesh, and the abomination, and the mouse, shall be

consumed together, saith the Lord. For I know their works and their thoughts: it shall come, that I will gather all nations and tongues; and they shall come, and see my glory. (Isaiah 66:15-18)

Like I said in the beginning of this chapter, I cannot show everything that is going to happen. But when we see and hear of the things happening, we should be seeking the truth out from our Father and Him only. He is the only one that can walk us through all that is getting ready to come upon the earth safely. Now that we are bringing the chapter to a close, I want to point out something. The thing that has been, it is now.

That which hath been, is now; and that which is to be hath already been; and God requireth that which is past. (Ecclesiastes 3:15)

Now is when a lot of the things that we have read and heard Jesus do, will be happening with me. Just as it did in the chapter of The Woman That Has Had Five Husbands. Now is the time that the powers of heaven shall be shaken.

Reincarnation

Along with several chapters in this book, this is not one I thought I was going to be doing. I have been talking to you all about this topic for some time now, and have showed you all that my two granddaughters are my parents reincarnated. This is all true still and we will be going over it again, but the Father has brought some more explanation to my mind, so I need to share this. But in order to paint the picture properly, we need to cover all of it. We will be going through the basics of this and then we will be showing you all how the Father taught me this firsthand. I will let everyone know up front that we all have been male, female, black, white, Chinese, Korean, Russian, etc. We all have been all over the world.

To start out, we need to be listening to how the Father first got me thinking about reincarnation when we wrote the first book. We will be looking at how no man will remember of things to come for those that come after.

The thing that hath been, it is that which shall be;
and that which is done is that which shall be done:
and there is no new thing under the sun. Is there any
thing whereof it may be said, See, this is new? it hath
been already of old time, which was before us. There is
no remembrance of former things; neither shall there
be any remembrance of things that are to come with
those that shall come after. (Ecclesiastes 1:9-11)

How can anyone remember anything of those that come after if they have not lived before? Now that we have learned that we all got

kicked out of the Garden of Eden, we need to listen to how our Father said the covenant is for a thousand generations. Who was He talking to? Remember the scriptures were not written because the men that wrote them witnessed what they wrote about.

Know therefore that the Lord thy God, he is God, the faithful God, which keepeth covenant and mercy with them that love him and keep his commandments to a thousand generations; (Deuteronomy 7:9)

Be ye mindful always of his covenant; the word which he commanded to a thousand generations; (1 Chronicles 16:15)

Now before we go on, I am going to show just one time of when we are told God will make a new covenant. And pay attention to how He says after those days.

Behold, the days come, saith the Lord, that I will make a new covenant with the house of Israel, and with the house of Judah: Not according to the covenant that I made with their fathers in the day that I took them by the hand to bring them out of the land of Egypt; which my covenant they brake, although I was an husband unto them, saith the Lord: But this shall be the covenant that I will make with the house of Israel; After those days, saith the Lord, I will put my law in their inward parts, and write it in their hearts; and will be their God, and they shall be my people. And they shall teach no more every man his neighbour, and every man his brother, saying, Know the Lord: for they shall all know me, from the least of them unto the greatest of them, saith the Lord: for I will forgive their iniquity, and I will remember their sin no more. (Jeremiah 31:31-34)

PRECEPT SEVEN

After what days? After the days of a thousand generations. He is talking to our souls and not the flesh. So, when we all got kicked out of the garden, He made a covenant with us for a thousand generations. Now we need to listen to how long a generation is.

The days of our years are threescore years and ten; and if by reason of strength they be fourscore years, yet is their strength labour and sorrow; for it is soon cut off, and we fly away. (Psalm 90:10)

In other words, the covenant is good for a thousand lives of seventy to eighty years. But then someone might ask why some people do not live to be that old if we are supposed to live that long. So, let us listen to why that is.

But thou, O God, shalt bring them down into the pit of destruction: bloody and deceitful men shall not live out half their days; but I will trust in thee. (Psalm 55:23)

Now we need to be thinking about the two greatest commandments.

Master, which is the great commandment in the law? Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind. This is the first and great commandment. And the second is like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself. On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets. (Matthew 22:36-40)

Then we need to pay attention to how we are to unto others as we would have them do unto us.

Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets. (Mathew 7:12)

This is when we should know that our Father will send us to those that we hate. So, when someone tends to hate someone for just being who they are, our Father will send their soul to the land of the people that this person hated. It is all because we are here to learn how to love the same way that our Father loves.

Thus will I make thy lewdness to cease from thee, and thy whoredom brought from the land of Egypt: so that thou shalt not lift up thine eyes unto them, nor remember Egypt any more. For thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I will deliver thee into the hand of them whom thou hatest, into the hand of them from whom thy mind is alienated: And they shall deal with thee hatefully, and shall take away all thy labour, and shall leave thee naked and bare: and the nakedness of thy whoredoms shall be discovered, both thy lewdness and thy whoredoms. (Ezekiel 23:27-29)

This is when we need to realize that our Father will visit the iniquity of the Fathers to the third and fourth generation.

The Lord is long suffering, and of great mercy, forgiving iniquity and transgression, and by no means clearing the guilty, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation. (Numbers 14:18)

So. When someone does something that our Father will not tolerate, He will cut their days in half. Let us just use forty years for half of ones days. Now that our Father will visit the iniquity of the Fathers to the third and fourth generation, the next life they live will be around fifty years. Then the next life will be sixty years. And then the next life will be seventy years.

And He does this so that our soul can learn how it feels to be around the people that you were in your last life. So, if you hate

someone for being gay, male, or female, you will be gay in your next life so you can learn how it feels to be hated for just being who you are. If you hate or despise someone for having an illness like cancer, our Father will make sure you have cancer in your next life. And if someone is racist and hates someone of a certain heritage, they will be sent to the type of person they hate. So, if someone is white and hates blacks, they will be black in their next life. There will always be people that hate one another for just being who they are, so our Father will make sure that the soul endures the hardships that they did unto others in their previous lives. Let us think of someone that physically kills someone, that person that killed, will be killed at the same age of the person that they killed. These are just a few simple ways to think about this, but the reasons people hate one another for just being who they are can go on forever.

The Father cannot send someone to the land of those that hate in a single lifetime. I am going to use me as an example so that I do not offend anyone. This is totally hypothetical, but if I hated Chinese people, I would be a Chinese person in my next life. If I hated a woman that became gay, and left me, I would be a gay woman in my next life. This must go on until all of Israel has paid for all their iniquity that we have done since we got kicked out of the Garden of Eden.

Now we are going to talk about how the Father taught me this firsthand. My mom passed away in November of 2016. Right after my mom passed away, my daughter became pregnant. I know she was pregnant before she told me. The baby was due on the fifteenth of August 2017. Then around June of 2017, I told my daughter and her mother that the baby was going to be born on the fourth of August. They both insisted that the baby would be born on the fifteenth. Then I got a call on the second and third, telling me that Erin, my daughter went to the hospital with contractions but was sent home. Then on the fourth, I got a call telling me that my granddaughter was born today.

I am not going to explain this in the way that I first thought it worked because I have been talking about this since the second book. I am just going to explain it the correct way so that I do not waste

your time. But the fourth of August was my dad's birthday when he was alive as my dad. The Father sent me to see my granddaughter, and then sent me to a family reunion on my dad's side of the family on the eleventh of August 2017. This was my mom and dad's anniversary. This was the Father showing me that mom and dad were back together.

For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. (Ephesians 5:31-32)

Then nine months later, Erin got pregnant again. And this child was due on the twelfth of January 2019. My second granddaughter was born at 2:56 am on the eighth of January 2019. My mom's birthday was January seventh. Now Erin said that they gave her some meds to try and stop the labor because they were worried about the position of the baby. So, I have no doubt that she would have been born on the seventh if the doctors would have let things just go naturally.

Now we need to focus on how the Father said the elder will serve the younger.

And the Lord said unto her, Two nations are in thy womb, and two manner of people shall be separated from thy bowels; and the one people shall be stronger than the other people; and the elder shall serve the younger. (Genesis 25:23)

In my mom and dad's previous lives, my dad was about two years older than my mom. My mom was born on my dad's birthday this time with a lot of the same health problems that my mom had in her last life. My mom suffered with kidney problems in which Avelinn, my first granddaughter, has the same issues. There are more of the same health problems that are the same, but the kidney problem is what sticks out the most for me.

Then my second granddaughter Adsila, that was born just after my mom's birthday has the same health problems as my dad did. My dad passed away from lung cancer three years after having his left lung removed. My dad had insomnia pretty much all of his adult life. No matter what the doctors gave him, he could not stay asleep. Now when Adsila was two weeks old, the nurse asked Erin if she ever had a chest tube at one time because she had a scar on her left lung. No, she had not and still hasn't had a chest tube of any sort. But she is on breathing treatments because she has difficulty breathing at times. And the doctors have her on some kind of medicine to help her sleep, but she too, can't stay asleep for more than a couple hours. Erin tells me that there has been times that she has been awake for more than twenty-four hours. And still only gets a couple of hours of sleep once she finally goes to sleep.

Adsila even has memories of growing up a blond-haired boy before. But her only brother is one day short of being five years younger than her. So, now my dad is younger than my mom. Now Erin's first two daughters used to be her grandparents. And my first two granddaughters were my parents in their past life. So, the elder is serving the younger just as the Father said it would be.

Now I want to look at what we heard in Ephesians again.

For this cause shall a man leave his father and mother, and shall be joined unto his wife, and they two shall be one flesh. This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church. (Ephesians 5:31-32)

When my mom and dad joined together, they did everything as one. They raised the children as one. They took care of the house as one. They paid the bills as one. Everything they did, they did as one. It was not dad's responsibility to do certain things, and it was not mom's responsibility to do certain things. They did everything as one flesh. Now they are still in the same family. Their souls stay together.

But now I want to listen to when we are told something very similar in the beginning of the Bible.

Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh. (Genesis 2:24)

Notice how this tells us that a man is to leave his father and mother and shall cleave unto his wife, and then they shall be one flesh. Let us listen to when God tell us that He is married to us.

Turn, O backsliding children, saith the Lord; for I am married unto you: and I will take you one of a city, and two of a family, and I will bring you to Zion: (Jeremiah 3:14)

Because I have shown how the divorcement bill that our Father gave to us did not become final in previous books, I will not show all that here. But we can know the divorce is not final until the end of the world. So, now let us listen to how we are told that we are to cleave to our Father just the same as a man is to cleave to his wife.

Thou shalt fear the Lord thy God; him shalt thou serve, and to him shalt thou cleave, and swear by his name. (Deuteronomy 10:20)

The only way we can become one with the Father is by cleaving to Him and all that He is all about. Now listen to how when all of Israel has paid for all their iniquity, the Father will pour out His spirit.

Therefore, thou son of man, prophesy against Gog, and say, Thus saith the Lord God; Behold, I am against thee, O Gog, the chief prince of Meshech and Tubal: And I will turn thee back, and leave but the sixth part of thee, and will cause thee to come up from the north parts, and will bring thee upon the mountains of Israel: And I will smite thy bow out of thy left hand, and will cause thine arrows to fall out

of thy right hand. Thou shalt fall upon the mountains of Israel, thou, and all thy bands, and the people that is with thee: I will give thee unto the ravenous birds of every sort, and to the beasts of the field to be devoured. Thou shalt fall upon the open field: for I have spoken it, saith the Lord God. And I will send a fire on Magog, and among them that dwell carelessly in the isles: and they shall know that I am the Lord. So will I make my holy name known in the midst of my people Israel; and I will not let them pollute my holy name any more: and the heathen shall know that I am the Lord, the Holy One in Israel. Behold, it is come, and it is done, saith the Lord God; this is the day whereof I have spoken. And they that dwell in the cities of Israel shall go forth, and shall set on fire and burn the weapons, both the shields and the bucklers, the bows and the arrows, and the handstaves, and the spears, and they shall burn them with fire seven years: So that they shall take no wood out of the field, neither cut down any out of the forests; for they shall burn the weapons with fire: and they shall spoil those that spoiled them, and rob those that robbed them, saith the Lord God. And it shall come to pass in that day, that I will give unto Gog a place there of graves in Israel, the valley of the passengers on the east of the sea: and it shall stop the noses of the passengers: and there shall they bury Gog and all his multitude: and they shall call it The valley of Hamongog. And seven months shall the house of Israel be burying of them, that they may cleanse the land. Yea, all the people of the land shall bury them; and it shall be to them a renown the day that I shall be glorified, saith the Lord God. And they shall sever out men of continual employment, passing through the land to bury with the passengers those that remain upon the

face of the earth, to cleanse it: after the end of seven months shall they search. And the passengers that pass through the land, when any seeth a man's bone, then shall he set up a sign by it, till the buriers have buried it in the valley of Hamongog. And also the name of the city shall be Hamonah. Thus shall they cleanse the land. And, thou son of man, thus saith the Lord God; Speak unto every feathered fowl, and to every beast of the field, Assemble yourselves, and come; gather yourselves on every side to my sacrifice that I do sacrifice for you, even a great sacrifice upon the mountains of Israel, that ye may eat flesh, and drink blood. Ye shall eat the flesh of the mighty, and drink the blood of the princes of the earth, of rams, of lambs, and of goats, of bullocks, all of them fatlings of Bashan. And ye shall eat fat till ye be full, and drink blood till ye be drunken, of my sacrifice which I have sacrificed for you. Thus ye shall be filled at my table with horses and chariots, with mighty men, and with all men of war, saith the Lord God. And I will set my glory among the heathen, and all the heathen shall see my judgment that I have executed, and my hand that I have laid upon them. So the house of Israel shall know that I am the Lord their God from that day and forward. And the heathen shall know that the house of Israel went into captivity for their iniquity: because they trespassed against me, therefore hid I my face from them, and gave them into the hand of their enemies: so fell they all by the sword. According to their uncleanness and according to their transgressions have I done unto them, and hid my face from them. Therefore thus saith the Lord God; Now will I bring again the captivity of Jacob, and have mercy upon the whole house of Israel, and will be jealous for my holy name; After that they have borne

PRECEPT SEVEN

their shame, and all their trespasses whereby they have trespassed against me, when they dwelt safely in their land, and none made them afraid. When I have brought them again from the people, and gathered them out of their enemies' lands, and am sanctified in them in the sight of many nations; Then shall they know that I am the Lord their God, which caused them to be led into captivity among the heathen: but I have gathered them unto their own land, and have left none of them any more there. Neither will I hide my face any more from them: for I have poured out my spirit upon the house of Israel, saith the Lord God. (Ezekiel 39:1-29)

We have already talked about how the time is coming that He will pour out His spirit. But notice how He is saying that He will do this once all Israel has paid for their iniquities. Now let us listen to when we are told not one jot nor tittle of the law will pass until all is fulfilled.

Think not that I am come to destroy the law, or the prophets: I am not come to destroy, but to fulfil. For verily I say unto you, Till heaven and earth pass, one jot or one tittle shall in no wise pass from the law, till all be fulfilled. (Matthew 5:17-18)

I do believe that when our Father starts to pour out His spirit, that means all things are fulfilled. Now to back this up, we need to listen to this.

But when the fulness of the time was come, God sent forth his Son, made of a woman, made under the law, To redeem them that were under the law, that we might receive the adoption of sons. (Galatian 4:4-5)

With all this newfound knowledge our Father is teaching me, along with all the knowledge in the previous books, we can know that the day He will start pouring out His spirit is right around the corner. Amen.

Conclusion

Now that we have completed another precept, I want to say that I hope you all enjoyed reading this as much as I did writing it. Out of all the books that Father has had me write, this one takes the cake, so to speak. This was, by far the wildest adventure I have been on. Again, all credit goes to the Father because there is absolutely no way I would be able to obtain all of this knowledge without Him guiding me every step of the way.

I hope you have enjoyed reading this as much as I did writing it. I must say with all this new found knowledge, I have been having a blast. When I first started writing this book, I wasn't really in the mood to write another. But after the trip to Alaska, things changed. And not only with writing this book, but everything in life has also become a blast. Seeing this new heaven and being in this new earth, with all things being made new, I am having a hard time grasping it all.

Now I want to listen to a couple of times that we are told to eat unleavened bread.

Seven days shall ye eat unleavened bread; even the first day ye shall put away leaven out of your houses: for whosoever eateth leavened bread from the first day until the seventh day, that soul shall be cut off from Israel. (Exodus 12:15)

And in the fifteenth day of this month is the feast: seven days shall unleavened bread be eaten. (Numbers 28:17)

Now I want to show where we are told to be aware of the leaven of the pharisees and Herod.

And he charged them, saying, Take heed, beware of the leaven of the Pharisees, and of the leaven of Herod. (Mark 8:15)

In the mean time, when there were gathered together an innumerable multitude of people, insomuch that they trode one upon another, he began to say unto his disciples first of all, Beware ye of the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy. (Luke 12:1)

Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees. (Matthew 16:6)

Since the Father has got me to start listening to the Bible again, something has come to mind. I have been showing you all that water, bread, honey, wine, meat, and even my blood and flesh are levels of knowledge. We have been showing you all that the King James Version of the Bible was actually written by God Himself.

When people go to a man-made church, they are being fed leavened bread. When one listens to the King James Bible, they are eating pure unleavened bread. If you can do as I do, you can eat unleavened bread every day of the year. And you too, will be ascending into the new heaven as I have. Listen to a couple of times that we can hear that our Father's hand is still stretched out.

The Syrians before, and the Philistines behind; and they shall devour Israel with open mouth. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. For the people turneth not unto him that smiteth them, neither do they seek the Lord of hosts. Therefore the Lord will cut off from Israel head and

PRECEPT SEVEN

tail, branch and rush, in one day. The ancient and honourable, he is the head; and the prophet that teacheth lies, he is the tail. For the leaders of this people cause them to err; and they that are led of them are destroyed. Therefore the Lord shall have no joy in their young men, neither shall have mercy on their fatherless and widows: for every one is an hypocrite and an evildoer, and every mouth speaketh folly. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 9:12-17)

Woe unto them that decree unrighteous decrees, and that write grievousness which they have prescribed; To turn aside the needy from judgment, and to take away the right from the poor of my people, that widows may be their prey, and that they may rob the fatherless! And what will ye do in the day of visitation, and in the desolation which shall come from far? to whom will ye flee for help? and where will ye leave your glory? Without me they shall bow down under the prisoners, and they shall fall under the slain. For all this his anger is not turned away, but his hand is stretched out still. (Isaiah 10:1-3)

Now I want to listen to the parable about the son that was lost.

And he said, A certain man had two sons: And the younger of them said to his father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth to me. And he divided unto them his living. And not many days after the younger son gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there wasted his substance with riotous living. And when he had spent all, there arose a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want. And he went and joined himself

to a citizen of that country; and he sent him into his fields to feed swine. And he would fain have filled his belly with the husks that the swine did eat: and no man gave unto him. And when he came to himself, he said, How many hired servants of my father's have bread enough and to spare, and I perish with hunger! I will arise and go to my father, and will say unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and before thee, And am no more worthy to be called thy son: make me as one of thy hired servants. And he arose, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father saw him, and had compassion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kissed him. And the son said unto him, Father, I have sinned against heaven, and in thy sight, and am no more worthy to be called thy son. But the father said to his servants, Bring forth the best robe, and put it on him; and put a ring on his hand, and shoes on his feet: And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill it; and let us eat, and be merry: For this my son was dead, and is alive again; he was lost, and is found. And they began to be merry. Now his elder son was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the house, he heard musick and dancing. And he called one of the servants, and asked what these things meant. And he said unto him, Thy brother is come; and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, because he hath received him safe and sound. And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him. And he answering said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve thee, neither transgressed I at any time thy commandment: and yet thou never gavest me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends: But as soon as this thy son was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou hast killed for him the fatted calf. And he said

PRECEPT SEVEN

unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine. It was meet that we should make merry, and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was lost, and is found.(Luke 15:11-32)

Now we need to listen to when our Father tells us not to look towards the past.

Remember ye not the former things, neither consider the things of old. Behold, I will do a new thing; now it shall spring forth; shall ye not know it? I will even make a way in the wilderness, and rivers in the desert. (Isaiah 43:18-19)

Brethren, I count not myself to have apprehended: but this one thing I do, forgetting those things which are behind, and reaching forth unto those things which are before, I press toward the mark for the prize of the high calling of God in Christ Jesus. (Philippians 3:13-14)

If you are still alive, do not look on the things you have done in the past other than to acknowledge your sin, seek forgiveness, and march forward. God will pardon any and all that truly seek Him. We bring this up now because now is the time for all to repent and turn back to our Father.

And the times of this ignorance God winked at; but now commandeth all men every where to repent: (Acts 17:30)

Before this happens.

Moreover the word of the Lord came unto me, saying, Also, thou son of man, thus saith the Lord God unto the land of Israel; An end, the end is come upon

the four corners of the land. Now is the end come upon thee, and I will send mine anger upon thee, and will judge thee according to thy ways, and will recompense upon thee all thine abominations. And mine eye shall not spare thee, neither will I have pity: but I will recompense thy ways upon thee, and thine abominations shall be in the midst of thee: and ye shall know that I am the Lord. Thus saith the Lord God; An evil, an only evil, behold, is come. An end is come, the end is come: it watcheth for thee; behold, it is come. The morning is come unto thee, O thou that dwellest in the land: the time is come, the day of trouble is near, and not the sounding again of the mountains. Now will I shortly pour out my fury upon thee, and accomplish mine anger upon thee: and I will judge thee according to thy ways, and will recompense thee for all thine abominations. And mine eye shall not spare, neither will I have pity: I will recompense thee according to thy ways and thine abominations that are in the midst of thee; and ye shall know that I am the Lord that smiteth. Behold the day, behold, it is come: the morning is gone forth; the rod hath blossomed, pride hath budded. Violence is risen up into a rod of wickedness: none of them shall remain, nor of their multitude, nor of any of their's: neither shall there be wailing for them. The time is come, the day draweth near: let not the buyer rejoice, nor the seller mourn: for wrath is upon all the multitude thereof. For the seller shall not return to that which is sold, although they were yet alive: for the vision is touching the whole multitude thereof, which shall not return; neither shall any strengthen himself in the iniquity of his life. They have blown the trumpet, even to make all ready; but none goeth to the battle: for my wrath is upon all the multitude thereof. The sword is

without, and the pestilence and the famine within: he that is in the field shall die with the sword; and he that is in the city, famine and pestilence shall devour him. But they that escape of them shall escape, and shall be on the mountains like doves of the valleys, all of them mourning, every one for his iniquity. All hands shall be feeble, and all knees shall be weak as water. They shall also gird themselves with sackcloth, and horror shall cover them; and shame shall be upon all faces, and baldness upon all their heads. They shall cast their silver in the streets, and their gold shall be removed: their silver and their gold shall not be able to deliver them in the day of the wrath of the Lord: they shall not satisfy their souls, neither fill their bowels: because it is the stumblingblock of their iniquity. As for the beauty of his ornament, he set it in majesty: but they made the images of their abominations and of their detestable things therein: therefore have I set it far from them. And I will give it into the hands of the strangers for a prey, and to the wicked of the earth for a spoil; and they shall pollute it. My face will I turn also from them, and they shall pollute my secret place: for the robbers shall enter into it, and defile it. Make a chain: for the land is full of bloody crimes, and the city is full of violence. Wherefore I will bring the worst of the heathen, and they shall possess their houses: I will also make the pomp of the strong to cease; and their holy places shall be defiled. Destruction cometh; and they shall seek peace, and there shall be none. Mischief shall come upon mischief, and rumour shall be upon rumour; then shall they seek a vision of the prophet; but the law shall perish from the priest, and counsel from the ancients. The king shall mourn, and the prince shall be clothed with desolation, and the hands of the people of the land shall be troubled: I

will do unto them after their way, and according to their deserts will I judge them; and they shall know that I am the Lord. (Ezekiel 7:1-27)

Come and gather with me in the new heavens and new earth. Allow our Father to make all things new for you as He has with me. Looking forward to the day we can wine and dine together in the kingdom of God. Amen

This is an update the chest pains that I was experiencing that we talked about earlier in this book, for anyone that might be wondering how that worked out. I did and am doing as I was told to do with the exercising and drinking more water. Without seeing a physician, it took two and a half weeks for the pain to completely go away.

I can say with all certainty, I have the best doctor that anyone can have. He never recommends that I go see or talk to a different doctor. He never charges me a penny for any of His perfect instructions. He is always willing, ready, and able to talk to me about any issues I might have, and I never have to schedule an appointment. As long as I harken to His voice and not man's.

